| $\begin{aligned} & u \\ & \varrho \\ & \square \end{aligned}$ | of the Theologital Stminaty. PRINCETON, N. J. |
| :---: | :---: |
|  | Collection of Puritan Literature. |
|  | Division <br> Section |
|  | Number |

10873

$$
57
$$




## IlDavide Per $\int$ eguitato

## DAVID Perfecuted. VVriten in Iralian

B
The Marqueffe Virgilio Malvezzi:
And done into Englifh
B Y
ROBERT.ASHLEY

$$
G E \mathbb{N}
$$

LONDON,

Printed for Humphrey cMofely, at \& the figne of the Princes Armes in St Pauls Chulch-Yard.

$$
1647
$$




## DAVID

## Perfecuted.



HE y that make a queftion whether it betrue or no that GOD fpeakes any more to men, or indeed that men have any more intelligence from Go.D; let them beleeve it for a certaine that he fpeakes, but they are too deaf to hear the larguage ; let them beleeve it for a certain that he writes, but they are too blind to perceive the Character: He that will underftand his voyce, he that will read his letter, let him betake himfelfe to the Holy writ, that is a Vocabulary, which the Spirit of God hath left us to explain his profound difcourfes by, that is a key to difclofe all thofe obfcure letters thas aredirected to us from heaven.

$$
A_{2}
$$

## 2AVID Perfecuted.

Will you, O Princes, will you, O people, conceive what it is that Goo fpeakes when he fends a peftilence, when he fends a famine, when he fends warre, when hee brings eftates to deftrution, or in hazzard to be deftroyed? Goe run over there names in the Vocabulary of the Almighty.

But the weak and weary eyes of our mind efchew the light of the truth, they precipitate themfelves into an abyffe of of miferies, and among the obfcurities of the night grope for the fplendour of the Sun. Thus wee renounce the prerogatives of the new law.

It is not the way to get forth of the Clouds in which the Ifraelites walked, for men, but to change them. Thote divine mytteries which they beheld only clouded up in darkneffe, are now moft traniparently obferved in a clear skie; yet the caufes of the Revolutions of States, of the increafe of one, of the diminution of another, of the fall of Princes, of Famine, of Peftilence, of Warre, were openly difplayed to them, and we on the contrary envelop them in the oblcurity of a thoufand ambiguities,
DAvid Perfecuted.
as if that were not true which the greateft Divines have told us, that the Chaftifements which came upon the Ifraelites befell them for our example.
God (peaketh but once (faith 706 ) and speaketh not againe : the holy writ is that booke in which hee hath fpoken: there then ought to bee fearched the catbes of good or bad events, where clearely, and for our fakes they are written.

To frame Politicke aphorifmes, to fet downe rules for it taken from prophane authors, is in a manner to pretend that mans will is neceffary and conducing.

Nay I could find in my heart to fay that it is an undeifying of God, and a deifying of the fecond caules. He makes them ferve his turne, but them he ferves not. He that in difcuffing upon naturall events brings in God only for a reafon, is but a poore Philofopher; and hee that brings him not in, in Inquiries of Politick orcurrences, is but a poor Chriftian; when it is his pleafure that the fire which at one time forched flould at another coole, he muft have recourfe to

## 4 <br> David Perfecuted.

his almighty power in working miraclee, but hee may very well without miracles give way, that the fame action which at one time hath reared up a Prince, fhould at another fink him.

Our too leaden wings cannot eagle us up from this bafe earth, wee walke in a gloomy aire, without lifting up our eyes to that moft glorious Sunne of the Empiream.

The Politick treatifes of the Gentiles which are but earthly, bring us back to earth, in that they have in them but earthly caufes; but the holy inftructions which are rent us from heaven producing heavenly caufes, ${ }_{2}$ bring us home to heaven. O molt benigne Lord; may it pleafe thee to give to drink of thy moft cleare and living water, this thirfty wretch who forfakes the ftinking and muddy Citterns of the Gentiles, rather loathing them then fatisfied with them.

If I knew not my felfe unworthy to be taken out of the darkneffe of my groffe ignorance, I would moft humbly and upon my knees entreat thee for one ray which like the dawning leading mee on to the moft cleare Noone, might at this
DAV I D Perfecuted.
prefent in fome part draw mee out of the obfcurity of this dimme night, that I might difcover thofe deep and profound myfteries which are concealed from the feebleneffe of our underftandings.

The Prophet Samuel reproves Saul, becauje that contrary to Gods commandement be had left Agag King of the Amalekites alive, and bad not Jlaine all his cattell.
$T$ He difobedience of Sant gives the 1 laft turn to the wheele of his great. neffe: It is a fire which confumet? crowns, for they are fodred with obedience. Hee knoweth not what belongs to matter of fate that lofeth this towards God: hee teacheth others to forgoe it toward their fuperiours, and as much as in him lyes, deftroyes the compacture of the univerfe.

Difobedience is the ofspring either of the arrogance of the braine, or of the weakneffe of the fenfes; either that men thinke to doe better then they are com-

## Davin Perfecuted.

manded, or that they are inclined to do worfe : In one of thefe the frailtie fometimes meets with compaffion, in the other the contempt al waies provokes to vengeance: This can never bee in regard of Gud, becaufe it is not polfible to bee wifer than God, and when it is practiled among men, although it may often feeme to produce good fruit, yet is it alwaies naught, as that which proceeds from an evill plant. Well ordered Common-wealths have not forborne to punifh it, though profperous victories ill difciplined bringing with them more dammage then defeatments doe.

## Davis Perfecuted.

Priefts they were, that were appointed to kill them, fo many facrifices as to bee killed.

There want not this day fuch: Sawls, that facrifice to God the facrifices of difobedience. Thefe golden mountaines heaped up with impiety that feemes fometimes to adorne them, defile the Altars of God, they only garnifh the ambition of man : Hee that thinkes with thefe to pacifie his divine Majefty, incenfeth it: as much ás in him lyes, with execrable blafphemy proclaimes that Majefty to bee moft wicked, and makes him partaker of his mifdeeds, as if he were bound to bee appeafed with him, fo hee may but have a fhare in the purchafes of his villanits. :

The Prophet replies becaufe thou haft rejected the word of the Lord, the Lord bath rejected thee from being King. Saul faies to him I have finned, return with me that I may worfbip the Lord.
Se the power of ambition, which hath oftentimes more force apon the
hearts

## 8 David perfeculed.

hearts of men then the Commandements of God have: He makes as if he repented, becaufe hee fears to lofe the Kingdome : He repents not becaufe he cares not for lofing Heaven. But (Oh the deceivable judgements of men ) becaufe he repents not; hee lofeth the kingdome of Heaven ; when happily had he repented, hee had loft neither the kingdome nor heaven.

He that willearn the beit art for preferving of ftates, let him read the decalogue, he fhal find there in ten lines ditated by the holy Ghuf, thote directions which are the molt affured for the achieving of heaven, and the leaft deceitfull for loveraignty upon earth : Policy is a Sea fo inconftant, fo turbulent, that there is no place to bee found in it where wee have not feene one Prince or other calt away, it is a peice of Architecture fo decayed, that it alwayes threatmeth to fall downe, that to keepe the frame of the world upon its bafis; God, that heaven and earth may not bee confounded, permits it ftill to bee tottering, yet fometimes under thofe that obferve his owne precepts.
DAVID Perfecuted.

## Samuel offers to depart; Saul takes him

 by the skirt of bis garment and teares it:- Even fo fhall the kingdome of Ifrael be rent from thee, addeth the Prophet.:-DOe not (Oh yee Princes) Ppoyle your fubjects ; Let the veftments of the Priefts be facred in your eyes: He that fpoyleth the fubject is not a Prince; hee is a Tyrant : he lofeth the name if he lofe not the eftate.

God hath many times made garments expreffe his intentions, peradventure becaufe they are in fome fort a part of our felves while they are united to us. The fpirits which continually exhale out of our bodies, are the fe that caufe this union.

The Coats of beafts are very certaine fignets of their nature; as the Garments of menare of their conceit, for as that apparells the one kind, to the other doth the other:. Every Country hath its difo ference of Garment becaufe each hath its difference of conceit, which hath not a cloathing of her owne, hath not a Prince of her owne : Againlt fuch

2 one peradiventure one of the Prophets exclaimed in threatning tearms when he faid, Woe bee to you which goe clad in Atrange garments : It may go for a kind of a fure token, that if they have not a Atranger to their Soveraigne, they would have one. A horfes coat fhewes his contitution, and a mans his inclination.

Saul anfwereth that be hath finned, get prayes the Prophet againe to returne with him to the Sacrifice, and to honour him before the Elders of the people.
7 Oleape from Religion to Hypocri$\mathrm{fie}_{3}$ to offend and therewith to defend himielfe, is not to ferve God, but to make God ferve his turne, and when one cannot deceive him, to deceive others by him. The caufe of fo great an implety is that execrable propogition n:ver enough deplored, that tis all one, to bee good, and to feeme good. This may bee true in regard ol men whofe

know-

DAVID P(r)ecuted. II
knowledge is but opinion.
No fooner was Saul made acquainted with the will of God, but he feeks how to hinder it ; no fooner leaves he to bie religious, but he becomes a Politician; as if the cunning of fate which is not fufficient to defend us againlt men, were able to defend us againtt Good.

The certaine knowledge that a Prince is to lofe his eftate, raifes up many to look after it. There is no fearing of him whofe fortunes the heavens oppole, and men are very gladly inftruments of Gods anger. If men were amongus as zealous to remunerate the good as they are to chaitife the bad, and rewards were equall to punifhments, peradventure the world would be better then it is: but becaufe punifhment is many times accompanied with profit, \& reward with fome loffe, man are more enclined to punith then to reward: And it is very convenient that in this world the Chaftifements fhould bee greater then the Rewards, to make us know that in the orher the Rewards fhall bee greater then the Chaftifements.

Samuel bad aid that be would not returne; yet bee returneth afterward, "though not to Sacrifice with Saul, yet to Sacrifice. Agog, not as a Minifter of Hypocryje, or of Policies, but of Religion: Hee causes Agag to bee brought before him, that bee might lay bim. He confiders in him the Image of a Tyrant waxen fat with the blood and . fubftance of his Subjects, and trembling at the anger of God. The Prophet faith unto bim; As thy fiword hath made many women childless, fo foal thy mothe bee made childleffe among women, and fo bee killeth bim.

KNow you why the Lord fid, Hee that friketh with the Sword, coal peri) with the ford? To add force to the law of nature, that faith, Doe not that to another which thou wouldeft not have done to thee : but little would this, if GOD had not added; for that which thou doeft to another foal be done to thee : the one doth instruct, and the other

$$
\text { DAvID Perfecuted. } \quad 13
$$

other terrifie us. If God Thouldnot fometimes punifh finnes in this world they wculd not beleeve that there is a God ; if hee Thould alwayes punifh fins in this world; men would thinke there were no other world for them but this.

Samuel departeth to Ramab, and there mourneth for Saul, becaufe GOD repenteth that bee had made him King.

PRinces may.well think it is no ihame to remove shofe from their charge, that carry themfelves fhamefully therein: yer need they not regard that falle rule of policy, that to change their Minifters before their time is to fubmit themfelves to their fubjects, to accultome them to diflike of their Governours, and a prejudiciall thing to their dominion in permitting them not to have the election, yet at leaft the approbation of his Minifters, who may thereby bee more apt to preferre the appetite of the people, before the Kervice of the Prince.

## 14: Dayid Perfecuted.

The malignitie of men hath mittaken the tearms, this is not to give way to the people,'tis but to give them eare. It is no loffe of authority, but a purchafe, and it fhall never accuftome the fubjects to complaine of fuch officers which deferve well, to take away thofe who deferve ill.

Man who is moulded of bafe matter attributeth to himfelfe more oftentimes then to God, who though he can never repent, yet having chofen a Minilter who turneth to evill, doth fpeake and worke as if herepented. And man who hath many occafions to repent, either repenteth not at all, or elfe proseeds, as if hee had not repented.

The latracntations of Samuel appease not Cod, and why fould his weepings appeafe him for Saul, whers Saul himSelfe weepes sot?

HOw oft doth the righteous offer facrifice for the finner, whiles the Ginner himfelf is, facrificing to the Devill? whiles
David Perfecuted.
whiles the one labours to appeafe God, the other provoketh him farther. It might feeme unto God that the righteous interceffour were aliar in craving pardon for him that refufethit, if God did not know that the finner is like to a mad man, who oft hath need of one of underftanding to fpeak to the Phyfician for him.

God in fome fort complaines againft Samsel, when hee faith, How long wilt thow mosrn for Sanl? Godi could not (if one may fay fo) endure his lamenting, and not hearken to his fuit. Thefe are thole waters which in a manner offer violence to heaven : The fpirit of God moveth upon fuch waters, and they make a river of oblivion in Paradife. The teares which are fhed, the prayers which are faid, and the fupplications which are fent up to God for otbers, are as acceptable to God, and more peradventure then if they were made for themfelves: They are efteemed of more merit, at leaft in regard of the motalitie of the action. Why then doe fome Princes perfwade themflves, that they fatisfie the obligation wherein they are obliged

## 16, DavidPerfecuted.

ot l ged to fome one, when they yeeld him his fuite which he hath made for another? Or to fay more truly, why doe fome favourites beleeve that there is fuch an impiety in their Princes? Let them call to mind that the office of a favourite is the office of an Angell, and ought therefore to prefent the fuites and fupplications of the fabjects to their Lord, and to bring backe the gracious grants of the Lord unto the fubjects; he that doth the contrary is a Divell, amd no Angell. :

Fill thy horne with oyle ( faith God to the Prophet ) and goe to Ihai the Bethleemite, for amongt his fonnes I have provided mee a King: He anfwers, How can I goe. for if Saul heare of it, hee will kill me. .

THus hee andwereth, not becaule hee teareth death, but becaufe hee is defirous to dofervice unto God; hee much prizes his life in that cale wherein to dye
DA. Y ID Perfecuted:
is not to obey. Hence let thofe that are imployed by their Princes learn that the death of the fervant is feldome the fervice of the Lord. It ought indeed to be received couragioully, but never to bie encountred but when it is very ufefull, and when the dying is an obeying. A man of worth is a high prized inftrument of the greatneffe of his Prince, if he cares not to preferve himfelfe for his own fake, yet hee ought to be carefull of prefervation for his Lord and Mafters fake. Every man that is fitted to dye is not fitted to doe fervice. It is true alfo what I have faid even in the common Souldier, ( whofe life rather then his braine is dedicated to the Princes fervice ) that heought alfo to endeavour to obey, and not to dye. He that runs headlong on death, doth not fpend his life to the advantage, but calts it away to the loffe of his Lord, his fervice is to overcome, and not to die, and indeed they lofe that are flain. To expofe needleny to death that body $\mathrm{w}^{\text {ch }}$ can do lervice to its Prince but whiles it lives, is a mof pernicious defire of vaine glory, contrary to good policy, againt good military difcipline,
i8 DA v 1 D Perfecuted.
and an affection full of deceit and flattery ; into which even the Generals whole life is mat pretious, do often precipitate themfelves, as if it were a greater bravery to fight then to command. But that Army is but in a bad taking (pardon me this digreffion) whole fatety confifteth in the arme, not in the braine of the Generall. Toknow how to command well in warre, is a part of the imaginative faculty. The imagination to work well requireth a good meafare of heate, whofe contrary is feare, which how little foever it be, the other abates, and how little foever that abates, the imagination is difurbed; whence it comes to paffe that to bee afraid and to command well cannot fland together : but how many are there that are incited more by Honour then by Courage, doe both fight and feare? thefe may handle the fword well, but yet not apt for command. The heating of the braine is not in our owne power, as is the managing of the hands: we have nocommand o. ver that, howfoever abfolute dominion wee have over this other ; for otherwife cowardife were not blame worthy if it

$$
\text { Dav id Perfecuted. } 19
$$

were of nature neceffarily in us. Thence it followes that there is no greater or furer figne of a brave courage then to command well in a battell; where both Reputation and life, yea, and many times the State it felfe comes upon the ftage.

The Lord willeth Samuel to take bins a calfe out of the flocke, and to $\int a y$ that bee is come to doe $\int a c r i-$ fice.

BEcaule God could fuccour him by ordinary meanes, hee would not have recourfe to extractinary. If hee fhould alwayes bee doing of miracles, men would not thinke his Providence fo great in creating the fecond caufes; and it he never ufed miracles, he fhould not perhaps bee known to bee Almighty. Where Go.d worketh many miracles, there is commonly great need of them; and where there is fuch need, there is but little faith. When he is not known by his Impreffion, Stamp, or Image, which

## 20 <br> Darid Perfecured.

which hee hath imprinted in the things by him created, then he findeth it requifite to make himflele feen in the works of his Omnipotency.

Samuel obeyeth the Lord, goeth and calleth Ifhai and bis fons to the facrifice, and looking on Eliab fuppofeth hims to bee the man whom hee fhould anoint, becaufe bee is the tallest and the goodliest of perfon.
Had the Prophet been of the opinion of thofe Philofophers, who have cenfured men of great fature to be voyd of wifdome, he would not at the firft fight fo much have refpected the taleneffe of tature. I for my part am not of that opinion, but doe hold it to bee moft falfe.
7 F thofe Phylofophers beleeved the neerenefle of the braine to the ftomack, doth trouble the operations of the underftanding, and if they have alfo imagined to themselves, that the

## 21 David Perfecuted.

vital firits, which afcend from the heart, may bee made animall fpirits, for the fervice and operation of the braine, are unapt for fuch effect, unleffe they bee firft fomewhát cooled : (becaufe of the incompatibility of wifdome with heat) wherefore have they not alfo affirmed ine taller fort of men to bee wiler then the little, as having their Braine farther diftant from the perturbations of the Itomack, and their spirits nut fo hot by reafon of their long way, and larger difance from their Originall? Peradventure iney are deceived, in that they beleeve that men are al wayes great by the forming power, through the fuperabundance of matter, not obferving that many times there concurreth wibhit as a principall Inftrument the Quantitie of heat, as it is commonly verified in thofe whore talneffe is accompanyed with flenderneffe. It hath therefore been noted as atrue obfervation, that the tall men that have little heads, and the little men which have great, have more Braine then the reft, which commeth to paffe not as many have thought, becaufe the little head in the great body,
and the great in the little maketh a mediocrity in the ordinary ftature of men; which is falle if wee meafure the mediocrity of the part in refpect of the whole of which it is a part: But becaufe the little head in a great man, is a figne that the extention did proceed of heat, and by confequence that the littleneffe of that member commeth through defect of matter in the bony and flerhy parts, which being but fmall, produceth the the thinner and more delicate Organs which doe not obftruct, or hinder the operations of the braine. The little man having a great head, is an argument that it is full of braine, efpecially if hee beebut flender, for it cannot bee afcribed to the thickneffe of the skull, becaufe that Nature would rather have imployed that matter to have made the man taller or greater. I am excufable if I feeke by reafon to overthrow this doctrine, becaufe I am willing to verifie it by the example of mine own ftature.

$$
\text { David Perfecuted. } 23
$$

The Lord willeth Samuel not to regard We countenance of Eliab, nor the tale$n: \Omega$ of his flature, but hee badrefufed him, judging not as men do by the outward appearance, but beholding the Heart.

Oe here the vanity of Metopolcopie and Phyfiognomie is pointed at. Beauty or Comelineffe is a moft perfect confonancy, arifing out of the fymmetrie and proportion of the firf Qualities. It gets in the eye becaure it is tair; It attracts the will becaufe it is good, it moves the underftanding becaufe it is true. The Poets in the vanity of their fables have haply come neere unto the truth, calling beauty by the name of the Sun, of the Starres, and of Heaven: It is certainly a peece of that Harmony which the motions and afpects of the Heavens, of the Sunne, and of the Stars doe incite, and hath fuch a radiant light in it elfe, that ( though wee know not why ) it doth if not inforce our minds, yet certainly incline them frongly. The Providence of God hath feldome infor-

## David. Perfecuted.

med che fairelt body with the faireft mind, that men might not beleeve, that from the fame Harmony of the temperament of the ftarres, from which proceeds the Beauty of the one, that of the other did proceed likewife.

Inai having finally brought forth his fonses before Samuel to the number of feven, be refufing them all, asketh whether be bath no more: Inai an. fwering, there is yet one which is feeding of the Jheepe, the Prophct cauleth him to bee (ent for, and anointeth him in the midst: of his Brethren, being the fame whom the Lord had appointed in the Jtead of Saul. Od having at firft chofen for Kin?, Ithe talleft that was in-Ifrael, chufeth the fecond time the lealt that was in the houfe of Ihai: The fir $f$ f fball be laft, and the laft saall be firft, (faith the Lord) who then chofe the laft to be firt. There is no difference of time with God, in whofe eternitie there is neither firft nor fecond. The eldeft may beftouteft, but are not

$$
\text { DAvid Perfecuted. } 25
$$

ufually the wifer. That tendernes that commonly enfeebleth the Children of our old Age, maketh the organs of their underftanding more tender and delicare. The cold of him that engendreth, gives them the more wifdome, and his organs the better difcourfe : whence it comes, that if the laft begotten be commonly the weakeft, yet they are oft and many times the wifelt. He that bringeth David from the fheep-hook to the fcepter, and exalteth him from the ftable to the kingdome; it is hee that humbled himfelfe from his kingdome to the ftable: Hee that is both a fheepheard and a King, maketh him a King who was but a Theepheard. There is a kind of Analogie in all forts of Commands. Hee that faid that to know well how to order a table, was a figne that he knew allo how to marfhall an Army, might as well fay, that he that could well keep a flock of fheep, had the skill how to govern a people well.

God from the fold hath taken Kings, from husbandry and hunting Tyrants: the husbandman would have the earth to produce that which naturally it doth not,

## 26 <br> David Perfecuted.

and that it fhould produce he wounds it. The hunts-man by fhedding the blood of pocre innocent beafts, groweth to be delighted in cruelty : But the fheepheard conducts his flock to pafture, brings it back to the fold, preferveth it from maladies, and defends it from wolves : his taking their milk, and their wool, is a disburthening of them, not a wounding. Let Kings learne to take their Miniters fometimes even of the fheepfold. The beft men are not alwaies in the greateft Palaces : a lowly Cottage often times inclofes abigh fpirit, and a ragged Rock a very cleere Diamond.

The good Spirit departeth from Saul, and the cevill one cntretl) into bim.

OOds refufals are the devills purIchafes : where the one departs, if the other enters not, he at leaft draws very neere, either to perturbe or to pofeffe,

## David Persecuted.

Let us feck out one that can platy well ( fay the firvants of Saul) that the King may bee eased, when bee is molefled by the evil pirit.

- Hey beleeved peradventure that the Melancholy humour being ftirsed up, they that are oppreffed by it might be eared by melody.

There have been rome of opinion that Melancholy is produced of the devill. The wifer fort if they did not beleeve that it is of his production, yet judged that it may eafly prove to be of his introcuction, and therefore teamed it the the Bath of the devill, becaule it is the Lees, becaufe it is black, becaufe it hath an Analogise with the darknefle of fin: The occafion of their beleif was the feeing fometimes how by the fixation theron men were lifted up or elevated in an extafie : yea, and fometimes how the harpneffe thereof irritating the brain, and firing the Images therein, hath made rome to Speak things whereof before they were not held capable; whence I think it came to gaffe, that many oppreffed with

$$
28 \text { David Perfecuted. }
$$

the greatneffe of the effects produced by this humour, have often judged the animall fpirits to be infernall fpirits.

I deny not, there are found fome melancholick perfons poffeffed with deyils, or that melancholy is an apt bath for the devill ; but I affirme it not only of the groffe, thick and dark melancholy, but even of that alfo which produceth the fubtileft and lighteft fpirits. Hee hath need of active bodily inftruments for his operations in the body. He joynes himfelfe therefore gladly with the fubtileft and fineft firits, becaufe they being in fome fort of a middle nature, being corporeall and incorporeall, are a more propo tinnate receptacle for a fpirit to unite Wimelle to a thing that is mealy cutporeall. An ancient Sage beleeved that our foule which hee imagined to bee at firft clothed with aire, had need of the like organs to joyne it to the body, whereunto he thought it not united but affitant ; neither are there wanting among the Divines thofe that have conceived the Angels to be clothed in like manner.

## David Perfecuted. 29

They tell Saul of David, that hee is strong; a valiant man of warre, can play well, is a wife and a comely perfon, and that God is with him.
Ow fhould the devill continue his poffeffion, being to be affailed with romany prerogatives, but that finding in them fome rayes of the glorious Archangeil Michael, he mult needs fly and hide himfelfe in the bottomleffe pit of hell.

Saul fendeth to Inai for bis fonne that keepeth the fheep, shom IThai doth find tinlo birn with fome prefents.
Enought not to com: before Prin. ces without prelents, nor to depart from them without thankfivings.

Saul trake's him his Armour-bearer; and writes unto his father that bee dotb not fend himbis fon dgain, because he had found favour in his jight. 4 Nd who is hee that is fo gracious in the eyes of Saul? It is even hee
that

## 30 <br> David Perfecuted.

that is to take his kingdome from him: It is an extraordinary thing amongft men, that their loves become their overthrowes : the affictions of a corrupt mind, like thofe of a difeafed body, are alwayes pernicious; nor are they motions of Nature, but the motions of that which hath deftroyed Nature, fhee inclines net to that which corrupts her, if thee bee not already corrupted; and if The bee corrupted, the is dead, the is gone.

## David fung and played when Saul was

 vexed with the Devill, and then the Devill left him, not becaulfe of Davids Muficke, but his Goodne $\iint$ e.I Ad the devil a body, Mufick might haply be able to chace him out, being unable to endure the power of Melody: he who is a friend to it, is an enemy to fin. One that writ hereof, tooke the delighting in Harmony, to be a morall figne of Pradeftination: Sinne difcompoleth all the confonancies in man,

$$
\text { Div vid Perfcuted. } \quad 3 \text { I }
$$

making a difcord between the inferiour aud faperiour parts, which is the caure of all evill, and finally of all diffonancier, which is Death.

If Health bee but a Harmony of the Temperament, and fickneffe a diffonancy , why are humours molefted? why farther diftempered with divers medicaments, and not rather reduced to a true temper with confonancies? Mufick w culd be the trueft medicine for all $\mathrm{Ma}_{\mathrm{a}}$ ladics, if wee knew the right and true proportion, and how to apply each to that kind of Confonancy that would correct it: if a 1 y -acromatick mufick hath been able to firre up the melancholick humour and to inrage it, why Tho:ld not the contrary be effetuall to qualifie and reftraine it?

If Nature in our maladies did happily feele that dus confonancie that were requifite, The would peradvensure rouze up her felfe as well as the fring of an Infrument; which though it be without life, yet firs and moveth it felfe, as foon as it feeleth a perfect union. Shee difcovers the truth hereof, in thofe that are ftung or bitten by the Tarantula,

32 David Perfecuted.
when wee fee that Nature flrives not to deliver her felfe from that poyfon, unti'l the be firft ftirred with that Conforiancy, whofe proportion doth correct her. This is not proper to that malady alone, but allother I beleeve would in the like manner be cured, if the Confonancies of all were as well known: But the ignorance of men, and the difcompofed nature of fin, makes us run to the Phyfician, when wee fhould have recourfe to the Mafician.

The Philistims come to affault the I fraclites, Saul with his Army goeth to encounter them, each of them plant bis Army on the edge of a bill, and leave the valley between them : there was in the Philiftims 1 army a man called Goliah.
Ee was a Giant, and he was abaftard; the Giant hath for his Correlative the rafh and foole-hardy: he being greater then men, thinks himfelfe es quall with God, as if where Humanitic doth end there mult needs Divinity begin,

## Das id Perfccuted.

begin, and that there were not rather an infinite diftance between. This is that Generation that opened the Cataracts of Heaven, which made the Sea overflow the Land: Antiquity could no way defrribe them fo well as to defcribe their fighting againft God. The greateft individuals of one Species, are for the molt part Lucifers.

Hee was a Baftard, and Baftards are commonly valorous, becaufe they come of Parents that were amorous. The Birth and Parentage, which ordinarily makes men hide their Talents, with the glories of their forepaffed Anceftors, which ringeth them that are prefent and living afleep, bath no place int thofe who being often times poore and defpifed, yet finding in themfelves the fpirit of thoke that begot them in a defferate manner, get up to the fteepeft: of the mount of Glory, al wayes egged on by the bitter touches of their fpotted beginning ; the continuall reproach and perpetuall fpurre of generous firits. But if on the contrary their minds bee dejected with their mileries into a dead fleep, and will not bee ex-

## 34 David Perfecuted.

cited and a wakned with the fharp fings of Hunour, they are not worthy to be reckoned amongft men; whence it arifeth that Baftards moft commonly light upon the extremes either of valour or of bateneffe.

Tbis Goliah defieth the Ifraelites to a fingle combat, hee requires that the fortune of the whole warre may bee reftrained to the fortune of one petty duell.
TO hazard their whole fortune, without hazarding at the fame time all their forces, hath been taken to bee no well advifed courfe : which yet peradventure might do well enough, if men could be content to lofe all their fortune, before they had loft all their forces. The prefent victories then might facilitate th.e future. But fuch Conditions if ever they be promifed, are very feldome obferved. Such fingle Combats are but Preludiums to fet battailes, and the happy fucceffe therein is rather a ligne that

## David. Perfecuted.

men may conquer, then that they have done it. The Conftellation of that party where Champion hath been Victor, is then taken to be ftronger, when it thall appear that he is governed by that which appertaines to the King, and not by his own peculiar.

Therewas none amongst the Ifraelites: but was afraid of this man. The King promifeth to give lim his daughter in Marriage that fhall overcome him.
D Ewards make valour appear, which lay hid before : they produce it, they doe not create it . It is great prudence in men to moderate their promifes when they are in great dangers: To make too large ones, is a token of fearfullneffe, and oftentimes doth not prevent the danger, but changeth it: To deliver from great danger, yeelds great reputation; Rewards increafe ftrength and reputation, and ftrength endangers the State: From hence it comes that Promiles are not kept, not becaufe they are made with

## 36 David perfecuited.

## purpofe not to keep them, but becaufe

 men are changed with their change of fortune, and he that Should perform, is no longer the fame that promifed.David, whowas returned bome, comes now into the Army to bring certaine prefents to the Officers under whom his Brethren did ferve : He enquires concerning the bufineffe in band: He askes what firall bee the reward: His elder Brother rebukes him of pride. and overweening.
Hisman difcernes not Pride from Fortitude, becaufe he looked on his brother with an envious eye, not with an eje of love. There are many vertues winch have their operations common with vice, being diftinguifhed only by the Intent: which becaule it cannot bee feen, is judged of by ophers, and mens judnements are not alwayes without paffion, it feldome happens that they judg without errour. He would not have any adventure on that which hee dares

## Dav Id Perfecuted.

not adventure on : Thofe defects that are common, feeme rather the defects of mankind, then of any particular perfons: he layes the blame on us, that by being free from fuch defects himfilfe, acquits nature of them too.

David is brought before Sau', who feeing him fo young, telleth bim that be is not able to fight with the Giant, who was experienced in war from his gouth.
D Rinces ought not to put any upona great enterprife, who hath not firt been brought up and tryed in things of the like nature. Danger hath not the fame looke with it when wee are neere it, as when we are at a diftance : when 'tis far off from us, our underftanding reprelents only the Honour and the Profit ; but when wee approach face to face, wee fee nothing often times but the ho:rour of Death.

It is true that Courage is a reall thing in a man, yet nevertheleffe hee knowes not that he hath it, till experience hath made, him know that hee hath had it.

38 David Perfecuied.
There are many that prove better upon tryall then they thought they fhould have done ; and many cone fhort of the opinion they had of themfelves. Wife men are very fearfull of danger, becaufe they have confidered well of it : but when they come to try it, and are no longer to confider of it, they ftand no longer in feare of it. On the contrary, they which are of little judgment, imagining all thingsalike, when they find it otherwife then they imagined, they grow alfo many times to bee other manner of men, then before they held themfelves for.

David to encounter this doatt of Saul, declureth bow that bee had fmitten Beares, and bow hee bad Jlaine Liors.

- O recount our owne doughty Acts is often times vanity, here it is of neceffity: hee did not rehearfe it to Shew that he had overgone great danger ${ }^{3}$, : but to undergoe greater ; not


## David Perfecuted.

to bee commended, but to bee commanded.

Saul refolves to let David goe to fight: Hee puts on bim his own Armour, whicb David being not able tomanage, puts it off.

EVen as a little man catinot fight wel with great Armour, fo neither can the leffer Princes with thofe greater. He that hath not fitted himfelfe with armour of his owne, is not to fight in anothers. Patroculus came not to his death till hee put on that of eAchilles. This is the common Doetrin of the Politicians, yet I take it fometimes to faile in regard that there are often found men of that worth, that like Oftriges, they convert others Armes into their owne fubflance. This may come to paffe, when one receiving an Army without a Head, makes himfelfe to be obeyed, and managing them by his valour, brings himfelfe into great eftimation ; If Generals that were no Princes, have fometimes drawn

## 40 <br> David Perfecuted.

by fuen meanes the Armies to be at their Devotion, and have gotten Kingdomes by luch Armies as were not their own, why fhould not a valorous Prince be able to doe it by the Armes of his Friends? .

David goeth with his ftaffe and his ling, with five $\int$ mooth fones against the Giant.

нE had no need of other Armour, he was armed with his confidence in God. He which hath this Armour, can never perifh : If we happento be diceived, 'is becaufe wee deceive our relves, having our confidence in thofe things which we ought not, or not having fo much as wee ought; to bring forth a true att of Confidence, is a very difficult thing : There is requifite a great affiltance of God to make one truly and. only relye on the help of God. If fuch acts were more frequent amonglt us, we fhould not haply account fo many events. to be mirscles. Tiney that teach us how not withftanding our confi dence is God,

## Day id Persecuted.

wee ought to doe as much as we can, or otherwife in feal of tufting in God we Should prefume upon him, their meaning may haply be, that it were but a rah prefumption to perfwade our felves that we have produced any true act of Confidence; but not if wee firmly beleeve that God for his part would affuredly helper us, when wee for our part Could produce fuck an Act.

The Giant derides David, curfeth and difduines him, but be putting a stone in his ling, throws it at bim, hitteth bim in the forebe.2t, m hers him fol grousing on bis face to the ground, and running upon bine cuttetb off his head with bis ford:
I hath been an ordinary thing in fingee combats, between a Giant-like man and one of a meaner feature, that the little man hath had always the better : The Phylofophers would attribute the cause to the courage which is counted to be greater in che lifer heart; a fall fire will heat a little room, when a larger
will fcarce be warmed with a great one. I have no affurance in this opinion, but would rather a dventure (if I hould not bee thought too bold) to affirme that Courage confifteth not in the Heart, as is commonly held both by the ignorant vulgar, and many of the learned. Who knoweth that it is not rather profuced by the fame imaginative faculty out of which fear allo proceedeth? - how many that in their health were exceeding faint hearted, in raging fits have jecone rafh and defperate, whish was occafioned only by the heat of the Brain? For if it proceeded from that of the Heart, they that are diftempered with fevers fould tee alwayes the moft couragions: and what is it that maketh hopeleffe min 10 refolute? Is it their Heart forfooth growne leffe or more heated then it was before? or their underftanding rather which fuggefteth unto them that there is no other way to efcape death but by encountring it? To what purpofe doe men fpeak to cowards to animate them? Reafons may indeed worke upon the Braine, but are not able to heate the Heart : Who knoweth not that the not

## David Per ecuted.

knowing of the danger makes menadventrous? Whence it comes that the wifelt are not alwayes the moft couragious. Hardineffe (and herein I refer my felfe to the better learned) is a certaine kind of madreffe, confirting haply in a hot diftemper of the Braine, which permitteth no confideration or difcourle of the danger of death. He that in fighting thinks he fhall be flain, cannot fight couragioully. And albeit the Phylofophers define the valiant man to be fuch a one as knowing the perils goes to encounter them, becaufe it is jult and honeft. I beleeve it ought to be underftood tefore he entreth into thofe dangers, becaufe after hee is once engaged, if hee knew them he would faint. A wifeman was of the mind, that Fencers were more fearfull then others, becaule they knew the danger more then others: It is not therefore the Heart, but the Brain, and if it come from the Heart, it muft be in regard that fame is the originall of all the operations of the mind. The Divines going a furer way, would refolve this problem by laying, that it hath been the pleafure of God by humility to

> 44. David Perfecuted.
overthrow Pride, and by the leaft things to abafe the greateft: If it were not fo not only in men, but alfo in States and Empires, there would bee no tydes and ebbes in the world, but he that was once the greateft fhould alwayes fo continue, feeing hee could not bee overcome by a leffer.

The Politicians would alleage Difdain to beethe caufe: hee that defpifth his enemy, doth not ftrive with all his might, but employing fome part only, and that with no great heed, is often overcome by one who being weaker then he, oppofeth him with the utmoft of his ftrength and cunning: One of the greatefterrours that I have cbferved in great Potentates, hath bin to fee how applying their forces on an enterprife, they have rather taken meafure of the enemy then themfelves, oppofing againft him only to much of their ftrength, as they conjectured to bee antwerable to theprefent affairs; and whereas with a greater power they might have bin fure of victory, with an equall one they have either loft it, or at leaft prolonged the warres with more expence of men and money. It is very difficult

## David Perfecuted.

difficult to meafure, the proportion of things by their Beginnings. Childrens garments muft bee allowed to be fomewhat larger then themfelves, lealt they growing greater, the garments become too little. It is enough for a meaner man if at the beginning he be enabled to refift a greater, that fo he may but get him reputation, and by the means thereof he can procurc himfelfe adherents and protectors.

The Giant was no fooner Jlaine, but the Army of the Pbrliftims being difcomfited, betakes at felfe to flight: and the I rraelites pur fue and flay them. $T$ Hat Army whole truift is in the ftraightneffe of fome paffage, in the height of any fituation, in the ftrength of their Trenches, in the valour of a man, or in any one fpeciall thing of good defence, is eafily overcome by him who fhall be affuredly perfwaded, that if hee can but overthrow fuch a part, or flay fuch a man, or paffe through the difficulties of fuch a hill, or fuch fortifications, he fhall find

## 46 David Perfected.

find no other refiftance, and therefore Shall be fit forward very foully and couragiounly: Because men having once loft that by which they were confident they fhould overcome, being dejected, think there is nothing left that can defend them againft the valour of their enemies. But that Army which relies upon its intire elf equally throughout is in a manner invincible: It may peradventare bee routed, utterly discomfited it cannot : Every one will fight to the Death,becaufe every one tufting in himSelf, will not diftrult of the victory, until he hath loft his life.

The daughter being ended David returnes with the Giants bead. Saul enquires of Abner who be is: Abnet not knowing him, goes to meet him, and brings him unto Saul: Hee askes him whole cone bee is: Hee anfwers, bee is the Son of Ifhai.

SEe how fading or how difpleafing the memory of benefits is in Princes;
DAVID Perfecuted.
cither Saw! did not remember David, or elfe hee was not willing to remember lin: Hee that but a little before had found fo much favour in his fight, hath now loft it both in his fight and memory: The memory of a benefit lafts well, it it lafts as long as the benefit, and the refpect that is gotten thereby often dyes before its Father. If $R$ tafons may be rendered for the affections of a Prince towards a Conrtier, be they drawne of Profit or Pleafure, or whether accompanyed with Honefty, yet it is a thing but of fmall coutinuance: If it follow Reafon, it formes a habit of which commeth fatiety, and if it be not grounded on Reafon, the ground of fuch affection faileth, It is a vanity to think our felves able to yeeld a reafon of the affectionate favours of Princes: Thofe are great, ${ }^{\text {F }}$ and flowly will they end, for which there can be no reafon given how they came to begin. There are ftarres which incline them thereunto by their influences, neither are thofe that love alwayes hap. py, for neither are the afpects of therealwayes favonrable : in this manner haply that great fcholler ment it, though he was

48 David Perfcuted.
not founderftood, when hee feemed to doubt, whether any reafon could bee given of the inclinations of Princes, or whether they depended on the courle of their Nativity. And whereas in all other occurrents hee had fhewed himfelfe a friend unto reafon, he never fpalie of this Argument or matter, but made a prefent recourfe unto Deftiny, which having oncecoupled and conjoyned with the courfe of the Nativity, there is no doubt but he meant it by the operation of the ftarres. Politicians may ceafe to teach the wayes to obtaine the favour of Princes; men muft be born to it, not taught it. A man may by his valour and wifdome make himfelfe well efteemed, but yet not beloved.

When bee had made an end of fpeaking, the foule of Ionathan was knit with the foule of David, in aknot of Amitie.

VT Onderfull things are Friendfhip and Love, whence they
DAvID Perfecuted.
proceed (with all refpect, and far from all prefumption be it fooken) men have not yet well declared for all their Philofophy. Some have thought them to be the daughters of Abundance, and of Want; but this were a taxing of Love and Amity with imperfection, and to deny the prime and chiefe love which we call the holy fpirit : for in the three divine Perfons there can be no defect. The reft of the Philofophers, have deduced the originall from the fimilitude of the parties loving, fome from the Heaven; fome from the farres, lome from the temper, fome from the manners, and lome finally from the features, yet peradventure they have ail miftaken : for if love came from the refemblance, a man fhould rather love the male then the female : and whereas Love is but feldome reciprocall, it fhould be alwayes anfwered with like affection ; feeing one thing cannot be faid to be like another, but that the other mult alfo bee like to it. I beleeve that there are fome Conftellations conducing to Friendrhip, and others to Love, which produce in their lubject, a kind of lovely Character which com-
meth not of the Temper, but rather of fome (I know not what ) celeftiall impreffions which the Heavens and ftarres with their operations have feft imprinted in that tender body, and that hee is molt beloved that hath moft thereof, and that he who hath leffe cannot be the object of Love, but only of good will or refpect. The reafon whereof is becanfe Beauty is the object of Love : Yet not Beauty which is like unto ours, but that which is greater, otherwife there would not (no not in Patrià) bee any love lowards God: And if fomerimes here wee love our equall, it is either becaufe then we fee none more worthy, or becaufe.w.e do not reflect thereon. But only that excellence which is in God is the adequate object of Love, becaufe that only which is in God is the adequate object of our will : and if wee cculd fee him as he is, hee fhould infallibly make us love him. But becaute we are here but sa in Via, he is not fo reprefented unto us: we turne our eyes to admire that celeftiall Beauty where we find it bett impriuted among us, and is often tearmed Gratia divijata, which confifteth neither in


$$
\text { David Perfecuted: } \quad 5^{\text {I }}
$$

the Symmetry of the Humours, nor the Proportion of the Lincaments, albeit it oftentimes accordeth and agreeth well with them both when it is not hindred by any defect in the matter, and fo fometimes, but not alwayes the fairef be the beft beloved. Hence we may learn the reaton of the little correfpondence, and the mach mutability in Love: It is not alwayes counterchanged, for if the greater Beauty bee beloved, that which is beloved will not love that which loveth it. It is changed as oft as there is reprefented to us greater beauty then which wee love. Yet it is not fufficient that it be reprefented unt us, if wee do not reflect uponit with a defire, and therefore many leave not their firt love, becaufe they permit not any new object of love to enter into their mind. .

Saul fuffereth not David to returne bome, but fetteth him over his Army: hee is very gracious in the eyes of the peop.e, and particularly of the fer:van's of the King.

$$
52 \quad \text { DAVI® Per } \int \text { ecuted. }
$$

$T$ He fubject that is grown great, diminifheth the glory of his Mafter : What courfe ihall a Prince take then that is but of flender worth? If he take not worthy men to him, how will hee governe his Kingdome? If he take fuch, how will hee be a King? Hee is not King over others that hath in his Palace a greater man then himfelfe. If his ftate be unfetled, he lofeth his ftate ; if the ftate be fafe, his reputation. With great reafon men might complain of Nature, if they were not for the molt part commanded by the better. He that holds the Scepter, isnot the King, hee is but the Servant of his Minifter who obeyeth him. Crowns come by Inheritance, 'tis true : but not the faculties of ruling : If fortune give thofe to whom fhe plealeth, Nature difpofeth the other to him that delerves. That Propofition of the Phylofophers is moft true that fome are bound to command and others to obey : This is confirmed by him that divided the fignes of the Zodiack into commanding and obeying fignes. This truth is not overthrown by feing him to hold a Scepter that was born fitter for the mat

## David Perfecuted.

tock ; though he play the King, he is not a King.

David commeth to ferufalem, with the Head of the Giant, the women meet bim, rejoycing, and afcribe moreto him in their finging then to Sau!, who is difpleafed thereat.
(Hort and unhappyare the favours of the feople; Mort, for like the floating of the lea it is toft withevcery wind; a Sea that in the fame haven wherein or:e time it hath fecured fhips, another finks them. Vnhappy are they, becaufe it is as a violent ftar, whofe radiall beams may bee good, but rot lucky, it never raifeth any but to make their downe-falls the graatcr : mahappy love becaufe it hath for a Correlative the Princes hatred: The Prince is not Lord of that people that loveth another better than him : If he be Mafter of their bodyes and means, the other is Mafter over their Hearts and Minds : But good God! how fhall a man belave himfilfe? mutt a mans va-
$\mathrm{C}_{4}$ lour

## 54 David Perfecnted.

lour needs become his infelicity? A wife man may indeed not defire applaufe, but he cannot hinder it, except he leave thofe qualities for which he is applauded, or depart from themthat a plaud him. Ought hee theia to frgoe the Ta lents which God hath beftowed on him? cremploy them only among wild beafts in the horrid wilderneffes, or in folitary places? The eminent vertue of men, il it be not the caufe of their death. is fo of their banifhment: At the firft they are fought to out of necelity, and then againe they are expeiled under colour of neceffity. The Tree, that was efteemed for its hadow, to helter us from the heate of the fummer, is afterwards cut down to defendus from the cold of the winter. The fame man whom Princes embraced in the heat of their neceffity, is he whomthey cut dowise in the cold of their jeloufie.

Saul fince that never looked aright on David. enemy to give a violent Metum to

## David Perfected.

our affect, whether by faring fiercely, or looking askew upon him, to frike him with our very fpirits, and with the greateft quantity and wort t quality that may be. Hie that thinks them not to iffue ont of the eyes, and that they proceded not to touch the object, when it is neere them, is deceived, and he that beleaves it, will not deny that they have their operation on that Subject. If the oily diverfitic of the alpect make the file fame radiation of the flare, to be fometimes gracious, and fometimes deadly, why fhould not the eyes, being the tars of this little world, have power to diverfifie their effects, according to the diverfity of their affects.

It was not long exp the Devill faulted Saul again; and when David played and jung to deliver bim from the oppression of the Brits, bee with a Pare in bis band would have: Plains bim, but David avoyded the blow and departed.

## 56

THat Tyrant is put to a fhrewd pinch, that is grown jealous of a fubject of worth and reputation: If he kill him, he feares the rifing of the people: If he fuffer him, he doubts his raifing of them. Now hee accounts him. felfe happy if in his opprefling him, he could make the faults of his will to bee layd upon the ignorance of his underftanding, and with the imputation of a mad man fmother that of an ungratefull. A moft wicked piece of Policy, to make our greateft defects the beft inftruments of our Government: There hath bin one that made ufe of drunkenneffe, to fecure himfelfe of the moft valorous man of his Army; and Sarl doth the like by his vexation with firits to make David away : Such colourable carriages doe move the ignorant rout to compaffion, rather then to rebellion, whiles they give place to Princes to bewayde the death of thore, whom themfelves have $f_{3 i n}$, and to make them beleeve that their tears of joy are tears of lamentation.

## David Perfecuted.

Saul perceived: that Godwas with Da vid, when bee could not jlay him with the cafting of his Speare, from which his valour coald not defend bim, because be did not expect it, neither bis wifdome becaule be did not firefee it.

HEe that will know when God is with his enemy (and this is a morall and not a naturall knowledge ) let him not confider the conqueits made by his valour, and by that which wee call Prudence, but the helps which hereceiveth from naturall inanimate things, as Clouds, winds, fire, frow, ice, raine and tempefts; for they, as it is written fulfill the will of God. What avaylethour valour if God bee not with us? and what is our Prudence if God do not govern it ? It is nothing ( I fpeake of politick Prudence, ) for it is a good connexion of prefent things, with the fus: ture and thole that are paft : but of that which is paft, and which is prefent, we know but little, and of what is to come we know nothing, For my part (in

## $58^{\prime}$ David Perfecuted.

regard of future things) I efteeme that as we give unto God an unproper Attribate of that which he hath nor, fo wee fuppofe alfo a vertue in man which is not in him. God hath not properly any prefcience, becaufe there is nothing future in respect of him, neither is there any Prudence in man, becaufe hee knoweth not what is to come. That which is in GOD is more properly to bee termed knowledge, becaufe it is intuitive, and the other in man may be called Chance, becaufe it works on a fubject which may be or not be.

Then Saul began to be afraid of David.
Hat the Prince fhould bee afraid of his fubject, and the fubject ftand in feare of his Prince, hath been acconnted a Harmony to hold the State happily together. This opinion howloever it may leeme a witty concsit, while fuch feare keeps in the meane, and grow eth not exceffive, notwithftanding is moft falfe: It is true that hot and dry may bee corrected by degrees, even as heavie
heavie and light may by their Counterpoifes, becaufe the degrees of the one are knowne, and the weightralfo of the other; but the affections of the pinde. can hardly be counterpoifed, becaife they have no firmeneffe nor meafure. Feare hath too fharfe a pricke for thofe that produce it, and is too troublefome a palfion to them that owne it ; the one w ith the qualitie that make them to bee feared, are fpurred on forward affer the Government: The other cannot willingly hold themfelves in, becaufe feare is a motion that is not naturall but violent. There is no man that defireth not to free himfelfe of it : The greater part a:tempt it, and in attempting it the State is troubled. If the Prince bee hee that feareth, he turneth to bee a Tyrant ; and if any fubject make himfelfe feared, $t$ 'will breed a Confpiracy; if the whole Commuialty, a Rebellion. The Subject ought to feare the Iutice of his Prince, $8 x$ the Prince that of God; if a Subject make himfilfe feared, he is no longer a Subject, or intends not to be fo; if the Prince bee afraid, hee is no longer Prince, or not like long to tee. To thinde tomake a

## 60 <br> David Perfecusted.

Prince good by Art, may chance prove but foppery; they are rather borne to it then brought to it. The goodneffe of a prince confilteth in I know not what inexpreffible myftery, that cannot bee known, nor can be taught : It wanteth nothing of the lat Individuation which gives it the being, and that fame being and no other. This conceit of mine refolves the Problem that demandeth how it comes to paffe, that many who in the managing great affaires, were held to be capable of the higher Dignity and Dominion, having after attained to it, been found to be unfit for it.

Saul made David a Colonel over a thoufind Souldiers, and fid after that be mould give him bis daughter Merob to be his wife, Supposing that to obtwine her, be would'fo far adventure againft the Philiffims, that he would be cline.

CAul would that David fheuld bee Slain, but God permitted not that he

## Day Id Perfecuted.

Thould be paft the thame of being wicked, till bee could no more hurt $\mathcal{D}$ avid, that Saul was paft it. This errour of ad. vancing men that are rifing, and not to know afterwards how to take them down, hath often hapned even to thofe that juftly and without any offince of God ought to have done it. A farre though but a Comet, becaule it is a light that is newly up, draweth all mens eyes to it, even theirs whote dammage it threatneth. A man of worth can no fooner begin to appear, but Princes beginne to emhrace bim, thinking to raie themfelves by his Friendfhip, when indeed he raifeth himfelfe by theirs, not heeding that inftead of growing they decreafe. It is a difficult thing for one to advance himfelfe, if he be not protected or impugned by a great one : Many times when one hath begunne to advance another by protecting him, hee rayfeth him higher by croffing of him, not becaufe it is likely hee would then recond him, but becaufe he knoweth not how to extinguilh him. Men are athamed, yea, and fometimes afraid to thew themfelves open enemies of one that is
thought

## 62. DAvid Perfected.

thought to be their friend who hath deServed well of them, and is accounted valorous. They feeke then by futile fleights to overthrow him, and therewith advance him the more. They are no i refolved to ute force untill their fabtilities faile them, and when there is no fecurity in ufing of force. Neither yet doe I commend it if they then goes about to fecond them, for the things that are forward in growing gould never tee recorded. Catiline by being opposed was overthrowne, and thoughin Cafar, it had not the like effect, it happened fo, because he was firf feconded, and afterwards opposed: Yet was it better once to. refit than alway to fecond him, becauí where the victory was doubtful, the lofle had been certaine. I am firmly perfwaced that if Catiline had prevailed to be Emperour, and Safar had been Taine, the Writers would have blamed the impugning of Catiline, and commended the opposing of Cafar; because there are many Politicians that make ufo of examples not to confirm their reafons, but to frame them. The errours of men confilt in -watering the Plant that grow-
David Perfected.
eth, placing it in their own Garden, delighting in the the beauty of it, and not kno:ving that it is a kind of Wolfesbane, untill they Araine at it and pull it up, and then it killeth them. If the great ones knew what hurt they receive by Chewing themfelves enemies to a little one, they would -not permit any forks to lye forth, if they were not foch parks as forthwith give fire to the gun, whole bullet Should deftroy them.

Saul marries his Daughter Merob to Adriel, whom bee bud promised to David, and caufeth it to betold unto bim, that be intendeth to give hens bis other Daughter Michol that lovedhim: David anfwereih, that be is not worthy to be the Kings Sonnet in law, because bee is poore and of as mene pedigrees.
Arriages are of power to further things formerly began, whether tending to enmity or to amity. Saul heth not how in deceiving $D$ avid he deceives
himfelfe
himfelfe ; and thinking to lay an impediment in his way to the Kingdome, he opens him the way thereunto. Some one hath made ufe of fuch meanes with better fucceff, but with more cunning. Hee was a private perfon, and not yet a Prince, when hee married his Sifter to his equall, not unto his inferinur, to lull him afleep without advancing him , and becaufe he to whom he marryed ber was not fo wife as David, hee hoped by fuch a marriage to have helpe to Atrengthen his fide, and to find a juz occafion to opprefie his Kinfman. But Sauhtad no need of Darids help to attaine to that Kiing ome which hee polfeffed already : Hee was without comparifon greater then hee, and might rather feare to increafe the repuation of David, then to bring his prudent watchfullneffe afleep, which was not like to give him ary juft occafion to opprefi' him. It is no fafe advice to advance men to the end to abufe them: The advancement is alwayes fucceffefull, but there is difficulty often found in abafing them. This is written for one of the neateit peaces of Policy, but
David Perfecuted.
bur I fet it downe amongtt the moft confuled.

Saul rendeth word to David, that be doth not difdaine his poverty, and that bee demands no other Dowry then a bundred fore-skins of the Pbilistims.

HEre comes now on the ftage one of the Engines which were hidden under the Honour of Marriage ; to bring David in danger to be laine by the Philiftims. If Nature had not often accompanied the moft certaine perils with the moft confpicuous glories, it were a commendable courfe to expofe them to fuch dangers whofe reputation terrifies us; but becaufe neere the greatelt downefats are the higheft hills, it is not $\mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{a}} \mathrm{fe}$ to let men clime up the tops of thofe mountaines where they may as well raif up as ruine themfelves. Occafion is it which makes men wife, or which brings them to be known. Hee that at firft fight could fee into men of ability

## 66 D'A v 1 D Perfecated.

ability by a hidden token, fhould under pretence of Honour make them fpend their dayes in delicacy and idleneffe, and not fuffer men to have a fight of that light, which untill it be ftricken out doth rever appeare. The feeds of Plants that are kept in veif:ls of Gold, or of Pearle, or of pretious ftone, are honoured therby, but being as buried and become barren, they bring forth no buds unleffe they be firlt caft into the foile of the earth Without motion there is no Augmentation, Refting is imperfection in things that may increafe: In God onely it is perfection, becaule in him there is no Augmentation. It is not in our power to make our felves great. The utmoft limit of our actions is in the hand of men of Fortune. How many that have bin very able in Po:entia, have come to their Grave without having any opportunity to performe an ACt worthy their fufficiencie?
Saul Speaketh to Ionathan, and to all bis ferviants, that they fhould kill Divid: Ionathan advertifeth D.ivid, aná puticibs Saulin minde bow
David Perfechted.

## rnuch he is obliged to bim, and what

 injustice it were to play him.RVt of what effect bee fuch RemonItrances of Obligations? The chiefe Obligation which a Tyrant pretends to have, is the confervation of his Dominion, and his greateft Iuftice is to put to death the beft. To oblige were a thing very defiderable if it were oncly to oblige, and not to bind himelfe for a farther obliging. That Oblıgation which feemed compleat to him that produced it, comes to bee accepred but as a beginning by him for whom ir was wrought. Hee that will binde another by benefits, mult joyne them one to another: The report of the one mult not ceafe befure he hath added another. The linkes that are not chained one to another dce not make upa Chaine. The refemblance hath a great force to move and receive in the Imagination even the Phantafmes that were dead.

Time is a deftroyer of all things ; where it deftroyeth not the greatnefle of mens actions, it will deftroy the marveling at it : for it frames them irito

## 68 David Perfecuted.

a habit, and that being once attained, makes the operations come on without difficulty, and without any reflecting. That which is paffed already doth cancell the obligation of private men; and with Tyrants that alfo which is to come, whether they be gratefull or ungratefull, they are alwayes afraid, that they will oblige them either by their owne rewards, or through difcontent of not being rewarded, will make infurrection.

The mords of Ionathan feemed to have appeafed Saul, whogiveth order that David returne to Coust.

THe Truth which paffeth through our underftanding doth not ufe to flye away fo faft, but that our will taketh hold and embraceth it, unleffe the malice of our fenfes defile it. It is not fo hard to withdraw a wicked man from his evill purpofes, as it is difficult afterward to keep him in a good mind, thereto is requifite in a manner a perpetuall affiftance,

$$
\text { David Pirfecuted. } 69
$$

affitance, for as foon as you leave him hee returneth to that from which you withdrew him.

David retarneth to the Court as in former times.

THey mult not all bee put to death of whofe valour we fand in feare, that thereby we may be fecured. To wfe a like proceeding is inconvenient, when the perfons are of a diffirent difpoGition. The benefits that ferve to ayd and provoke the wickedly minded againft their Prince, are but as Chains, whereby generous minds are drawn to their devotions. So that to oblige them is to bind them : But the ruine of the good proceeds from the multitude of the Evill: which are not only evill, tut doe counterfeit as if they were good; fo that becaufe it is a difficult thing to difcerne Truth and Falfhood, men will rather deceive themfelves in hindring a thoufand that ought to be cherifhed, then in cherifhing one alone that ought to bee hindred;

70 David Perfectuted.
hindred; and becaufe it is eafier to bee ingratefull then to maintaine their gratitude, though they beleeve not alwayes that it is neceffary to put deferving men to death, yet they feigne fomerimes that they beleeve it, that they may cover the bafeneffe of their minds with the forcible jealoufies of their Soveraignty.

The evil Spirit returning againe to moleft Saul, when David played, Saul atrompted againe to fmite him to the wall with a Sfeure, but be turneth afide and efcapeth.

VHen the fubject once finds his Prince to be afraid of him, hee ftands alwayes in feare of the Prince ; fuch jeloulies have no other fires to confume them but impoffibility; for he that ftands in feare, beleeves that whatfoever may happen unto him, wiil. The firt perill we incurre in any thing maybee aferibed to fortune, the fecond if it bee the fame is commonly attributed to our

## David Persecuted.

indifcretion. But the goodneffe of $\mathcal{D}_{a}$. vid makes him to be excusable in regard his exceeding good Conscience made bim fo adventurous : David trufteth Saul, becaufe Saul might fafely have trusted David. As wee naturally imagine other men to look like our elves, fo wee fuppofe them of our owne conditions. That which Shall happen to a man, is not always the fame that fhould. The confequences of the future are fallible, because the Antecedents prefuppofed by us are false. Hee that knew well the cuftomes and manners of all men as they are, and upon occafion fhould make ufo of them in conjecturing what is to come, Should not need to have recourse to the vanity of Aftrologers,

Saul caufeth Davids house to bee compaled with Souldiers that should kill bine, yet gives them not order to enter into the house, peradventure because in tho fe times it was'reputed too great a wickedneffe tokillonc in his


## 72 <br> David Perfecuted.

bed. Having given over himfelfe a prey to wickedne (fe, be bad not haply as yet lost all re/pect unto goodne $\iint$ e.

- Hat men are not altogether wicked, nor yet perfectly good, is not, peradventure, becaufe they know not how to be fo, but becauic they cannot poffibly be fo: It confifteth rather in the ftrength of nature than of will: For if Nature have left no power to our feebleneffe to reach to the height of goodne ffe, why. fhall we beleeve that fhe hath left any to our corruption to come to the extremity of evill ? Hee that blamed a Tyrant in that behalfe, and thereupon did pretend that their ruine was for the moft preordained, declared his beleefe to be, that the mifchiefes which are deftructions were confervations: He difcovered his not knowing, that the evill which is not a being, cannot fubfift without the fupporting of that good which is a being, and finally he made it manifeft, that hee had not read the Mafter of thofe Doctrines, with which he had honoured his writings, becaufe his faying was, that
David Perfected.
the Tyrant, when hee goeth not in the way of goodneffe, mut not fifer it to be quite out of his light, and that if he will not bee good throughout, yet that be mut at leaf have a moity of goodneffe.

Michol tells David what perill bee is in; Joe lets him down through a window and hayes an Image in bis place in the Bed.

Od makes use of the Acts of WuI man wittineffe, as Iuftruments of his Providence; thole footteps that fly it, are the dele fame that lead to it : Saul makes $\mathcal{D}$ avid his fonne in $\mathrm{Law}_{2}$ to bring him to his end; and becaufe he is his ion in Law, heefcapes it : That fentence, that the Deftinyes lead thole that follow them, and draw thole that are unwilling, is an unadvifed faying. They that wrote it were deceived either in deny. ing the Providence of God, or in the manner of expreffing it : Wee difpofeth all things fweetly: Hee conducteth

## David Perfecuted.

them that goe with a good will, and thofe that are unwilling to goe, are conducted (if I may fo fay) by themfelves.

Saul Sexdeth fome again to take David, they bring word that he is fick in his bed : Finally, be lofeth all refpeciz of bed, and,will bave him Jlain however; but in ftead of David they find an Image: Saul reproveth his daughter Michol, who excufetb ber Selfe by her Hushands threats.

7 en in their defires inveft-themfelves fofar in their own interef, that they make themelves beleeve that every one that knowes them fhould cooperate with them : but if they alfo invefted themfelves in the intereft of others, and did not confider every one in reference to themfelves, but rather each one in reference to himfelfe, and whereas they think but of theirs alone, they formed as many interefts as there are men, they would not find themfelves fo oft decei-

## David Perfecuted. $\quad 75$

ved. Saul confidereth Michol as his daughter, \& by confequence in referrence to himfelf; if he had confidered her as Davids wife, then he had confidered her in refernce to her felfe, and had not found it ftrange that fhe fhould fave her husband out of her fathers hands: When women depart from their freinds houres, they oftentimes leave nothing behinde them but Love.

Saul fends fome after David, they find bim in the Company of the Prophets prophefying with them be fendso. others afier him, and they find him inlleke manner : In the end full of anger and fury, bee goes bimfelfe, and he alfo remaines with them, and prophefieth in like manner:

Hereare fome fo fuperfitious, that they account all things miraculous, becaufe they are ignorant of their fecond cautes: fome againe are fo head-ftrong,

## 76 Dav ID Perficuted.

as to deny all miracles becaufe they know not the firft caule; and in conclufion there want not thofe that are fo facrilegious, that they wil rather acknowlede the $D$ evill to be the doer of fuch miraculous effects than God, becaufe they themfelves are more of the Devill than God. I know not whether Saul might bee reckoned among thefe, or whether knowing the miracle hee fuffered himfelfe never theleffe to be trafported by his anger and fury to contend with the Almighty. All finners in regard of themfelves doe undeify him, yet there are found very few that do defire to undeify him, yet there are not wanting fome, who in their choller would willingly they could reduce him to nothing, that hath brought them out of nothing. Hee that is in choler, I would fay hath even loft his underftanding, yea, I would think him ftark mad, fave that there remaineth only fo much reafon in him, as fufficeth to make his works worthy of chaftifement: Choler (and perhaps I am not deceived) is a hort fever ; which if it were in the humours as it is in the 1 pi : rits, would prove to be a frenzie, where
DA v ID Pcreceuted.
unto it is fo neere of kin, that if by a little while it continues it were not known from the other, there would farce bee any fuch piercing eye ithat could difcern betwixt them : That little reafon that remaines in the cholerick man makes him to differ from the mad man; yet makes him worfe then hee, becaule it makes him not only to erre, but to finne.

David flyes, and going to mect Ionathan, lie asketh him what ceill hee committed that frould procure San? toperfecute bim.

Ee knew not peradventure that an eminent Vertue is no leffe perfecuted then an exorbitamt Vice. I am of opinion that even Tyrants themfelves do like well that their Minifters be men of valour and worth, but they would meafure them as they do cloth, by their arme, allowing them as much as will fit the perfon they reprefent, and no more: Good Minifters are fometimes better
than the belt, because the belt are formetimes as dangerous as the wort are difo honourable. It is a happyneffe in Drines, how good soever they be, to be fervel by good subjects equall to their affaires, for if they be of abilities above their employments, they neglect them, if beneath them, their employments ruin them. It is a fortunate thing therefore to happen on foch as are fit for the putpole; fleeing we ave no Inftrument by which the degrees of worth may be meas fred, neither any one that knoweth julio by how much every offer req̧uireth.

Iomathan anforeveth Dividthat bee. (mould not need to fear, because bis fathe would not refolve upon any enterprife without communicating the Same to bim, and that bee would advertize him thereof : But David doth not beleeve th it Saul would acquaint him: with bis purpose.
To what end fold a Tyrant communicate his Machinations? they

## David Perfecuted.

are fo fhamefull, that he cannot expect commendations: Hee is fo diftrultfull, that he will not feeke any counfell, and fo farre from trufting others, that hee farcely trufteth bimfelfe. One mult needs beleeve this Truth, when wee fee that diftrutting the better part of himfelfe, which is Reafon, his truft is wholly in his fenfe: when he communicates his thoughts, hee doth not impart them to have conference about them, but to command, noe to bee counflled concerning them, but to have them put in execution. He hath no regard of fons, or brethren, or wife, or friend. The intereft of fate is all in all with him, and befudes it hee makes no account-of any thing. A Tyrant is ordinarily fo clofe by nature, and fo enured by Art to conceale his intent, that when hee would willingly bee undertood, hee cannot fometimes make them underftand him. For not only men know not what he thinks, but many times they underfand not what he fayes...
80
David Perfecuited.

They agree that David /Would hide himsSelfe, and Jonathan gould observe what the King faith when on the fir $f$ t day of the monet be fhould note Davids absence from the Table, and that by a figne betweene them bee Should make knowne bis Fathers intent. Then they depart asunder resewing their oathes and Covenants of friendShip.

THe frt day of the moneth being come, Saul freeing that David appeared not, flattering his defire be would not believe that David abfented himself for fare, but rather for forme uncleanness : when he fees him not appeare on the fecong day he asketh Lonatban what is become of David, who anfwereth that he is gone to celebrate the folemnity ; then Saul reproachfully reproveth his for for preferring his friend hip with David before matter of State, by reafon that while David lived he could not be eftablifted in the Kirgdome.
Dav id Perfecuted.

To chatife an offence committed is proper to the Law : that which would be committed is referved to God; that which may be committed is peculiar to a Tyrant : when it is not juftice, but a point of State that feekes the life of a Subject, there is fcarce any remedy: If David had offended, he might have hoped for pardon, and haply have obtained it : But where there is no offence, there can bee no recourfe to Clemency, nor expectation of it. Thofe merits that would have countervailed his faults, do condemne his innocencies. A great occafion it mult bee to put an innocent to death, and becaufe it is great, it is infuperable, When juftice hath had her courfe in condemoing, the leaves Clemency her place to abfolve ; but where it is injuftice to condemne, the putting to death proceeds of felfe intereft. It is good for him that dyes, if hee dye innocent ; but in regard of the world it is better being guilty when he is condemned. Hee that hath done an ofence, and demands pardon, fpeakes not a word but to the Princes praife; he confeffeth his fault, declareth the vertue of Iuftice in the Prince,

82 David. Perfecuted.
and in demanding his pardon, he fhewes that hee doth alfo beleeve the vertue of clemency to $b=$ in him, But all the words of the innocent found to the blame of the Prince; He fhewes him to be unjuft, he declares him to be a Tyrant, he feekes not to pacifie him; hee incentes him, and cannot hope for mercy becaule hee cannot aske it: if hee pray the Prince to fare him his life, hee mult needs difcover the caufe that moves him to take it away, and becaufe he dificovers it, he is made worthy of Death.

Ionathan demands of. Saul, for what offence he doth perfecute David : but the King in aragecasts a peare at bim, and be flies.
$T$ Here is nothing more offenfive to a Prince than to require him to declare what he delires to conceale. The word (why) or (when) imports an Interrogation, ought never to be found in their mouthes that treat with Princes: The interrogating hath Iknow not what fuperiority, becaufe it obligeth one to anfwer

## Dav id Perfecuted.

anfwer, and Princes are not to bee obliged, but rather to be obeyed.

Ionathan rifeth from the Table in a great anger, be goes the next morn. ing where David was, and gives the figne according to their agreiment. David conses out of the place where bewas bid: Ionathan informs him of his fuccelfc, and reiterating the Oathes of the:r Confederacy, and the tokens of their Amity, not without tender, teares they depart afunder.

VVHat thing is friendhip ? It is a urion as one may fay oft wo foules in one body, which in a fort doe informe it, if not truely yet vertually ; and if a foule bee fo much grieved when it is to depart out of an earthly body which it informed; why fhould it not alfo be grievous to depart from another foule which the loved? Such a departure fhould bebut as a death, were it not that the diftance of place doth not breake off the

84 David Perfecuted.
the anion of thofe things that doe not poffeffe any place. But as in the parting of friends the foules are not fo much afflicted, the bodies are grieved in forgoing the fomentation of thole fpirits that were a confolation to them. It is not credible that Nature having permitted us fpirits to offend us with, hath not alfo granted that the ipirits of a friend Mou'd be comfortable unto us. Otherwife the fuirits of Hatred and of Love Chould be the felfe fame.

David flieth and commeth to Nob to Achimelech the Prieft, whomarvelling to fie him alone, demands the occafion thereof. David anfwers that he goes about the Kings fervice, who bath fo commanded. ?

F E aith truth, that he goes about the Kings fervice, for in flying he doth the King good fervice by bereaving him of occafion to doe a great outrage. His fight is not to efcape chaftifement for

## Dav Id Perfecuted.

his offences, but to avoyd the mifchievous requitall of his benefits.

O the lamentable condition of men of high defert, they have two mof potent enemies, Envie and Feare, the one very hardly to be overcome, the other impoffible, nay rather the victory over the firft makes the other the greater.' Envie like a mountaine, if the waters of valour increafe, is fometimes overwhelmed: but feare like a mip, the more they increafe, the higher do:h it rife. What mult they doe then, that are fo befet with impoffibilities ? Let them couragionfly make head againtt the obitacles of their good fortune, if where it is; and where not, let them give place to the evill. It is neceffary. fometimes even in a forme to Atrive againft the winde, if wee fee the Haven neere at hand, but if it be far off, it is better to ftrike faile and runne adritt than to make fhipwracke. . The molt worthy when they are not the greateft, become the moft infortunate: Valour can never clearly be difcerned but onely. in a Prince: There, becaufe it is profitable to the fubjects, they reverence and feare itnot, and becaule it is an honour

## 86 David Perfecuted.

to them, they commend and envie it not. It is fo faire a thing, that if thofe two mon?ters Feare and Envie, did not deforme it, men would even adore it, but haply God permitteth them to deforme it, left it fhould bee adored, becaufe it is adored over much when it is not lo deformed. If it bee true that it is agreeable to nature, that the beft fhould command, it cannot be contrary to Nature, that the better fhould bee feared by him that doth command. If the eminency of vertue could bee laidafide, perhaps there would not fome be wanting, that to lead a quiet life would willingly reduce themfelves to that mediocrity that might keep them from contempt, and defend them from envie : But as that eminency is faire, and not eafie to be acquired, fo it is fometimes hurtfall, , becaufe it cannot be laid afide.

David receives the fword of the Giant Goliah from the Priest; and eates of the Shew-bread, becaufe bee found no otber fword for defence, nor any other bread for his fuftenance. Neceffitie

Eceffity enforceth him, fhee fometimes makes that lawfull which at all times is no fo: It is a hield, which being ill ufed, workes the ruine of the world. All mifdeeds, how hainous foever, doe withdraw themfelves out of the danger of the Law, and in fead of being condemned, to be born withall are invefted with the Cloak of neceffity: there is no ajoflute neceffity ireman, becaufe he is a free agent; if hee fuffir no outward violence, he hath none within him; thole Which we call nearnties, and which wea pretend that thay fres from the Law, are mide to besfart by ths Law: Tnastate neceifary confequances by fuppofition, having a condicionall antecedent for their fouadation: But ths fuppofitions that are not authorized by the Law, have no confiftence; for otherwife, all the attions of mon hould be lawsull, feeing all might bee neceffary by fuppoing a conditionall antecedent before them, out of which a neceffry confequance fhould arife by fuppofition. Therefore it is not true that neceffi:y hath nolaw, but it is very true tha: the neceffity which hath no Law is only that which is an ene ny to the Law. -

## 88 Da v id Persecuted.

David flies to Achifh, but feeing himSelfe and his virtues known, being much afraid of bis envy, be faineth bimfelfe to be mad, and changets bis countenance before him.

FT Ex that is borne into this great Theater of the world, ought to know how to fut himfelfe into sundry habits, that be may be enabled in this Comedy to reprefent many prions. When a man fees himfle perfecuted by envy, be mut like the fhelfinh fruitfred by the dew of Heaven, catt away his peale rather then be a prey to thole that have him in chafe. David puts on a forme of madneffe, and by it brings $A$ chis to put off his envy. The countenance of the former is transformed before the eyes of the latter, not that the effigies of the one is altered, but the ins select of the other: If it had pleafed the Lord by his mercy and benignity to root up envy out of the world, how many $D$ avids would change their countenances in the prefence of eAchilb? But they that hate valour and vertue,
89
David Perfecuted.
let them (I befeech them ) tell me what thing it is they thinke they hate, they hate even themfelves. Vertue cannot be odious; if it be good, it is faire alfo; if it be faire it is the object of love, and not of hatred. The envious is anignorant Painter, or a malicious one; who in drawing the vertue of others deforms it ; either he takes the perfections from it, or addes imprefections to it, and blames in another that which himielfe hath added of his own to it, or what he hath taken from it. Yet this were not much if he did not alfo expofe that piqure to publique view, that they who cannot lee the originall might hate it,

Take away David out of my-prefence, faith Achifh; Have I any need of madmen?

THis King is one of thole that when the time comes fhall call themfelves felves fooles, for having believed wifemen to befooles: I know not which error to bee the greater, either to thinke wife
wife men to be fooles, or to account fools to bee wife men: of this ignorance as out of a root arife all precipitated courfes. The molt dangerous perlon that is reprefented, and the greatelt foole that can be found, is hee that takes upon him to be wife.

David departs thence; and faees bime felfe in the Cave of Adutlam, where bisbretbren and all bis Fathers houfe come unto him.
A. S a Foralgne Warre is the only remedy to unite the difordinate mindes in Common-Wealths, fo are enmities and perfecutions to make an attonement in families. This is a true rule when the difcords are not bloudy, and when proceeding no farther than to fome high tearmes, they are not growne to hatred.

Thofe brethren that in a fort would ha ve hindered the fortune of David, are they which now, are willing to help him in his mifery. Bafe minds applaud our fe-
licities,

## David Perfecuted. <br> 91

licities, and abandon us in our difafters; but they that are only corrupted by envie, feraining yet a kinde of generofity, when their envie rather fprings from defire of honour, than Malignity, they runne readily to affift their alies in their dangers : and if they goe not to applaud them in their glory, it is not for that they defire not to lee them great, but becaure they themfelves would gladly be great.

The malecontented alfo gathered together to David, and made him their Captaine.

T T is impoffible but there fhould bee fome fuch kinde of people in a State. If the Prince be good, then the evillare malecontent ; if hee be evill, the good are : and fome that are not difpleafed with the Princes government, are fo with their own, by which being ruinated and wafted, when they have no hope in quiet courfes, they affect rothing but turbulencies. The ftate ought to beware of 2, moft potent enemies, hope and defpaire

## David Perfecuted.

for thefe two extremes are they that moleft it, the greateft and the leaft of quality; the one fuppofing that their good fortune calleth them to a better effate: the other by their evill one are ftirred to avoyd the wort : for this caufe I fuppofe was that City preferred by a profeft politick Writer which is inhabited by the middle fort of men.

The Prophet Gad advifeth David to depart, and to go into the land of Iu. dah, and Saul bearing that David was feene there, complaineth greatly amongft his fervants, that David being not able to give them vineyards nor houfes, nor make them Commanders, nor otherwifi eveward them, hould find followers and be be abandoned.

D Rinces do erre when they thinke their Rebels fhould not be followed in hope of reward. I feeake not of $D_{a}$ vid who was a King and no Rebell, one
that

## David Perfecuted.

that was raifed up, and not rifen againft his Prince; one that was flying from him, and not contending agaınit him. The rewards expected of treachery are farre greater than thofe that are yeelded to fidelity. And what doe not they promife, which promife that which is none of their own? what doe they not give before they bee well advifed that it is their own? Difordinate minds are not content with ordinate rewards : their troublefome heads account quietneffe their enemy, and even thofe of a quiet difpofition doe fometimes furfet of reft, becaufe the naturall defire of change makes felicity it felfe to be tedious.

The Subjects ferving their Prince, if they will bee rewarded, oftentimes are driven to fhew fome exceffive merit, becaule there are few that thinke themfelves bound to thofe whofe fervice is bound to them : but he that followes a Rebell, hath allready merited of him in that he followeth him. That falfe propofition, that to worke where one is obliged diminifheth his merit, is both pernicious to Princes, and prejudiciall to Subjects. The obligation rather increa-

## 94 <br> David Perfecuted.

feth the merit, feeing reward is due to the Subject, not only for that which he prefently performeth, but for his future actions which hee hath obliged himfelfe unto. The ftranger that doth fomewhat for the Princes fervice, gives him onely fome fruit of his owne tree, whereas the Subject hath given him the tree it felfe with all the fruit.

Doeg the $\mathcal{F}$ dumean anjwereth Saul, that be Saw David when be came to Achimelech the Prieft, who gave him befides vietuals, the fword of Goliah; the King fends to call him and questions him thereabout. He, who the truth being knowne, expected rewardrather than punifhment, doth not excufe himfelfe as not guiltie, but Speakes with that confidence which rather proceeds of innocency than temerity', faying. And who is among al thy Servants more faithfull than David the Kings Son in-

## David Persecuted.

Lain, and readier to doe all thy Commandements? Neither is this the first time that I have prayed the Lord for him. Farre be the name of a Rebell from me. F thought I had dose Service to thee, in doing ferviceto thy chiefs Favorite.

7 He fubjects of the Tyrant that hath an inward Favorite, are intangled in freights inextricable. Let them look for ruine at all hands, if they hate him when he is exalted, or if they love him when thee falleth; yet what errour doe they commit in loving him, but that their Lord doth the fame? Hee cannot finde fault with others, unlefle hae firth condemne himfelfe; and he deferves the greater chaftifement, bs cause he ought to have greater advertifement, inconfidering who he is whom he exalts above others. It is not the part of Subjects to examine the actions of their Soveraigne: It is their glory to fecond them; and yet it is not Sufficient to obey the commands of a Tyrant, if we dive not also into his fecret thoughts. Wee that leeks

$$
\mathrm{E}
$$

to fearch into them, makes himfelfe (as it were guilty of death; hee that doth not, eafily becomes lyable. He embraces fometimes fuch a one as he could be content were made away by his Subjects, he diffembleth for his proper intereft, yet permits not others to doe fo for theirs. If his thoughts were alwayes bent toward the profperity of his people, hee were a wicked Subject that did not bend himfelfe wholly to his lervice.

Saul commands Achimelech and all
the Priefts of Nob, to be faine.

T Who have found elfewhere that the fame proceeding which provoked Sasl, had pacified a Tyrant, fhould wonder at the diverfity of the effect, had it not beene produced by the innocency of David, who left eAchimelech no place to defend himfelfe without condemning the King, not onely of an overfight as it was in the other, but even of ingratitude, perfidioufneffe, and cruelty.

## Dav id Perfecuted:

## Saul faith, kill Achimelech axd all

 the Priefts, bat no man firreth; be bids Doeg kill them, and bee preSently obeyeth.THe voyce that commandeth in generall, proceedeth not with fo much Tharpneffe, as that which is directed to fome particular. The dividing of it into fo many eares, makes fo many divifions, that it becomes diminifhed in every of them. The rewards as allo the punifhments which are in common, come but flowly, but the private areas foone obtain'd, as they are deferved: He that would chaftife generail errors, or would reward the merits of all, as thofe of fome particulars are ; on the one fide hee would deftroy the world, and the empty treafuries on the other: And therefore as in the great errors of a multitude, the proportio decupla is obferved, fo likewife in fuch great benefits, the like decimation is ufed, if not fome greater proportion. Whence it comes that particulars are more eafily wrought on to doe well, and with greater difficulty to do evill the multitude, becaufe their feare

## 98 David Perfected.

and hope of chatifement and reward is greater.

Saul goeth afterward to Nob, where be killeth frsall and great, as well of theose ex as of the other, as well men as beasts.

IF that City had been culpable, and $D_{a}$ vida a Rebell, Saul perhaps bad taken no ill course, that being the firft and only place. That Prince is fomtimes the molt pious, which upon occafion is montevere: his cruelty is deep, but not large, becarfe if it be intenfive, it is not extenfive. It is true that where many Cities have rebelled, the ufing of greater in the frt that is taken, doth not difhearten the reft, but makes them defperate and obftinate in their defence to their lat breath. It is fuch an Antidote as is not to be miniftred to all that are difeared.

Abiathar fonne of A chimelech efcapeth out of Nob, and commetls to David, who afficts bim greatly, faying that be is the caufe of the death of fo many perfons.
THis is an intollerable paffion,becaule three moft potent affections are the procurers of this griefe, and inforce the revenge: The Character of friendShip melting the heart, the prick of honour which enkindles it; and finally the inter $f$ ft which excites it. To defend our friends is fu profitable for the maintaining and increafing of Monarchies, that they which have beene held ro bee mokt prudent have endeavcured it, even in places farre remote from them, not to receive ayd or fervice, but onely to help and luccour them : hee that knoweth not how to make ufe of this rule, knoweth not how to rule. The greatelt Rulers and Potentates of the world have made themflues great by this Art; yea this colour is fo pleafing, that it dazleth the eyes of the people, and maketh them often applaud fuch a one, as under the colour of defending his friends, brings $\mathrm{E}_{3}$
himfelfe

$$
100 \text { Dav.ID Perfecuted. }
$$

himfelfe into the eftates of others: but if he finde great refiftance there, feeing himfelfe unable to offend thore whom hee would have oppored, hee oppreffectis them whom he fhould have defended.

Word is brought unto Duvid that the Philistims hadd inquaded Keliah, and Spoiled it: Hee askes coungell of the Lord, whetber bee fhallgo againft them; who anfwers bim, that bee fin.ll goe, overcoms and defent them.

T Ee that will learne the way into matter of State, let him but obferve David, let him not enterprife with fraud, but with valour : Let him not defile his hands with civil blood, but with that of the ftranger ; nor offend thofe whom he would have to be his fubjects, but defend them. It is true indeed that molt men grow great by fraud; not becaufe it is morefafe then valour, but becaufe it is more eafie ; whence it comes

## David Perfecuted.

that there are many fradulent, but few that are valorous : notwithftanding the the greater part even of thofe that by fraud have made themielves Matters, in feizing on the Country in which they were borne, have firft manifefted their valour either in enlarging or defending it. To defend the fubjects of others, is to touch the finett ftring of State and Dominion; if the Lord grieve at it, he feemes ungratefull; if hee fuffer it and iay nothing, he is in little fafety. The Subjects are not to be defended by any, but their own Prince : It is his proper office. He that arrogates it to himiel:e, if hee bee not already, he will be in the Princes roome. Thie wifet Commonweales have not bin ignorant how much this poynt importeth, declaring that they knew it for a matter of much conrequence, and of maine importance, when they would not permit the Subjects themelves to be the defenders of themfelves.

## 102 David Perfecated.

Saul wnderstanding that David is in Keilah, prepares to goe and befiege bim; which be forefeeing, caufeth Abiathar to enquire of the Lord whether Saul will come or no, who anfwers be will. Then whether they of Keilah will deliver him into the bands of the King, and te anfwers they will.
7 He deftruction of Nok had made the men of Keilab Yo ungratefull, as that they would have delivered him ints the hands of his enemy, who had but at that intant delivered them out of the hands of their enemies. Gratitude works exceeding great effects in generous minds, and the greater when it hath brought forth : It is then \{urely prevailing over private interef; yet muft it of foree give place unto feare, to which all the paffions give way, I meane in State affaires, becaufe none of them can be ufed when wee thinke our felves to be therby endangered, without which they cannot be exercifed: It hath been difputed whether the Prince or the people are more ungratefull. I am of opinion

## David Perfecuted.

opinion that there is ingratitude every where to be found, if our being gratefull cannotbewithout loffe of our lives; yet rather in the people than in the Prince, becaufe it is eafier to find one man than many, to facrifice his life to his reputation. But if the queftion be of augmenting or diminifhing the State, Thold Princes to be the more ingratefull, becaufe their intereft is very great ; and that of the people howfoever it bee in their entire body as great, is but fmall notwithftanding in every particular : whence it comes that men more eafily part with a little, though in many it be much, than in one manalone with much, which in many would be but little. .

Divid departs into the defart of Ziph, to bide himfelf in the wood. Saul hears of it, and followes him in vaine: Bit Ionathan goeth to bim; comforts him, and Saith, he is a Sured that bee ball reigne over Ifrael.
QEe here the force of -Frieadfiip, which makes fonathan rejoyce that

IO4. David Perfecuted.
David is to take the kingdome from him. Albeit that friend/hip feemeth to be without intereft, yet is it not altos gether without intereft. The affection that we beare to our felves, is the rule of all our affections. They who have fup= pofed that a friend loveth another more than himfelfe, have haply been deceived, for if fometimes a man lofeth his life, his goods and eftate for his friend, it is not in regard that he wifhes more good to $a=$ nother, than to himfelfe, but becaufe he acknowledgeth no other goods but vers tues, which hee gaineth, when glorioully for his friends hee forgot thofe of fortune. But they that love riches, their eftate and their dife above vertue, when they faw fome forgoe their goods (which they fo much eiteemed) for their friend, were eafily induced to think that they loved not themfelves fo much as their freind.

I was never of opinion that it was any imperfection, to lóve himfelf above others, but have rather efteemed it an imperfection not to love himfelfe than others, He that erreth not in this, fhall never offend; becaufe hee that finneth,

## David Perfecuted. 105

dettroying GOD as much as hee can, deftroyeth himfelfe, or as much as hee may : feeing that all his good is depending upon the goodneffe of God.

The Ziphines give notice to Saul that David had hid bimelfe in their woods, and they condust him where bie is: David finds bimelfe out of hope, feeing himfelfe encompaffed round about. But Saul is ad. vertifed by a meffenger, that the army of the Philiftims was entred into the land.

C Inners many times have no recourfe unto God, but in their utmof extremity, and many times God delayeth the deliverance of the faithfull to prove them: and then he heareth them: but thofe other are feldome delivered out of their dangers, but they return eff-foones to their mifdoings. He fuffers them to returne thither whence his feare had with.

106 David Perfecwted.
withdrawn them, which departs as foon as hee hath delivered them, To referve himflefe from ayding his friends till they be in extremity, is a thing well befiting in God, who can helpe whenfoever hee will, and then willeth when it is beft; buru ia men that have no power according to tbeir will, it is perilous. When it moves not to difance, yet it diminifheth the obligation, and moft commonly produceth Ingratitude. There is a kind of proceeding put in ure (yet not alwaies with good fucceffe) by Putentates when they have received fome difguft for the Gatisfying of two affections, their anger and their intereft; to fuffer thofe that have given them diftafte, to be mortified, but not to bee oppofed. This courfe is rather to be practifed with enemies, and may prove well when theenmity proceeds not of emulation, if at leaft that ate do not lift him up to a higher fpheare It is a difficult thing for a corrivall not to be alwaies an Enemy when fuch emulation hath one degenerated into hatred: and when he ceafeth to be an Enemy, he will ceafe alfo to be a corrivall, either having' paffed into a further degree, orbe,

## David Perfecuted. 107

ing fo overpafled himfelfe. Though Saul were more enraged againt David, yet he leaves purfuing him to go againt the Philiftims, with whom he hath more intereft. Phyfitians do fometimes not only not affwage a griefe, but fuffer it alfo to grow ; whiles they cure, a putrid Fever hapneth. Hee isvery unwife, that for the healing of a part is careleffe of the whole, which whenit dyeth, the part dyes with it.

David being retired into the bolds of Engadd:, Saul returnes to purfue bim even in roakic places, baving vanquibed the Philiftims, and entering inso acave for bis neceffary buf ine fes, he hapned intot the fame, in which David and bis men were bid; where they per (wade David to kill bim, but he is contented only to cut off alap of his garment.
TO kill the chiefe Commander of an Army, if hee be gracious with it, when hee that killeth him hath not

$$
108 \text { David Perfecuted. }
$$

another Army, is the revenge of a private perfon to difcharge his paffion of hatred, but not of a Prince that defireth dominion. The Army is thereby incerfed, maketh prefently another chiefe, thinkes to revenge the lofte of their Prince, hateth the murtherer, and is more ready to dye againt him, thanferve under him. David, who was in the way to the Kingdome by manfuetude and fortitude, accompanied with the feare of God, and by confequence a reverence toward his King, and humility withall, could forgoe thofe vertues, and take to him revenge with irreverence and cruelty, without loffe of reputation. Hee that is come forward with one vertue, ought rather to dye than to change it : there are fome who having gotten reputation by one manner of proceeding, cannot alter it, becaufe it is naturall to them; others will not, becaufe they are profpered with it ; and thofe ought never to change, whofe demeanour hath ever been vertuous. That power which is rifing, becaufe it rifeth commonly by the meanes of reputation, mult beware of lofing it, and preferre it even before

## David Perfecuted. 109

life, for therewith all its good is loft, Politicians have efteemed this rule to be fo true, that they have made it an univerfa!l one, and will have a Prince rather to hazard his eftate and life, than to lofe by meanes of Peace, 'Truce, or Tribute his reputation. I fubfrribe not to their opinion, yet doe I agree, that if the greatneffe of a Prince confilt in his reputation, hee oughe rather to dye than to lofe it; but if it bee founded on ftore of mony and people which are his Subjects, let him yeeld to the time, make peace and truce ever, though it bee with difadvantage of reputation; let him become tributary, though it be to an inferior Nation, and leave not any thing undone how meane foever, ( 10 it bee not againlt Gods Law) rather than to adventure his eftate; for any thing is better than to put that in jeopardy. If that be not lof, it is never out of feafon to recover whatfoever is loft: Its prudence in Princes and no Infamy; they ought not to abhorre any thing that may augment or maintaine their dominion. Private men write fuch weake rules, becaufe they meafure them by their owne compaffe: Every degree

## 110 <br> D. a v I d Perfecuted.

of men hath his proper and peculiar kind of reputation differing each from other, fo. farre forth that many things account ed infamous in one degree, are well repared in another. A Prince that hath a great eftate never lofeth his reputation, if he lole not his eftate, for his eftate is his reputation. The world is in a confufion in fuch fort that men of one degree leaping into that of others by confounding the diverfe degrees, have confounded all the world. The Merchant will take upon hiun the Gentleman, and the Gentleman the part of the Prince; the religieus that of the Souldier; and where the reputation of the one confifts in fuffering and forgiving of injuries, hee leapes into that of the other, whiles he feekes to requite and revenge. I am to bee excufed if Iam long in this matter, which is the caufe of great errours in the world; for if every one would follow his owne profeffion, it would foone be known that reputation confifts in knowing well how to performe his own profeffion.

## David Perfecuted. <br> III

David being on one frde of a mountaine; Seeing Saul on the other, calleth unto bins and herweth him his garment, affuring him of his good will, complaineth that hee is perfecuted, but blameth the Kings Minifters; and not the King himgelfe. Saul bearing that malice is imputed to bis fervants, dath not excure bimjelfe by them, but layeth the frult on bimselfe.

IT is an ordinary thing of male-contented men to comlaine, though not of the Prince himfelfe, yet of his Miniters. That which $D$ avid doth here out of modefty, is done often by others out of fubtilty. To rife againtt the government, makes the name of a rebellion the leffe odious, deceives the people, yea, many times, the Princes themelves for a while who fometimes diferne not at the firt the ambition that commeth masked under difcontentment. Princes ought therfore to have their Minifters about them of fingular goodneff, and of tried prudence,

## II2 <br> David Perfecuted.

dence, that upon the firt rumor they may bee well affured of the falfe-hood of fuch complaints, and break the heads of fuch horrible Serpents at their firft ap. pearing. The reverence that the people beare tuward the Prince is fo great, that it would be a di.ficult thing to ftir them up againt him, but by firt beguiling them; and though it be all one te rife againft the government, and to rebell againft the Prince, (becaufe either the Prince is he that governeth, or he that governes is the Princes Minifter) yet it app:ares not at firg with fo foule a face. It is trae indeed that an infurrection of the people is occafioned by abad Minifter, in which cafo the Prince dothalwayes amiffe to chaftife him. In the people there is not alwayes one defire cover: ed under another, but if the great ones arife againft the government, it is not becaufe they are not well governed, but becaufe they would be governors themfelves; to fatisfie their demands were to confent to lofe the Soveraignty, feeing fuch will not be fatisfied, till they obtaine it.

## David Perfecuted. II3

Samuel dieth, he is buried with bonous, and is by the people moft tenderly bebewailed.

I Know not whether mourning for the dead proceed of piety, or meer intereft : It may favour peradventure of piety to bewaile when hedieth, but not after he is dead : who would not have compaffion uf his friend, while he fees him, or imagines tormented with thegriovous agonies of death. Men are certainly in very great paine, for they are in the paine due to a very great fault: And who would not aftei rejoyce to fee him departed victorious over humane frailty, and to . triumpth over death it felfe, without h1ving left any other fpoyle in that conflict than his body, and that for a very fhort time?

To lament the dead (if one may fay) is then molt impious, when it feemes moft pious: and then ought moft to bee done, when it feemes not dus at all. The death of the righteous, at which wee ought to rejoyce, makes us to mourne ; and that of the wicked, which wee ought moft to lament, doth rejoyce
114
David Perfecuted.
us. It is no friendly but an envious part to be grieved at the death of that friend, whofe life may make us believe that he injoyes his deferved glory. But it is a part of pisty to bee forty at their death, whole wickedneffe doth make us doubt that they are caft headlong into hell. The world is fo mighty full of evill and defperate fnares that the good fhould not defire to be in it, becaule there they may bs corcipied; and fo great is the mercy of the Lord our God, that the wicked Chould defire to be thereis, that they may be amended. But if wee are grieved in regard of our owne interelt, is it not more available that our friends pray to God for us, than to men? He that thinks he hath lof his friend when he dieth, if he believe the immortality of the foule, and doth not thinke him damned, muft then beleeve that the Characters of his vertues are lolt with God. Ohow tilue it is that all our errours doefpring and grow from our muddy fenfes ! They acknowledge no interelt but earthy, no happineffe but wor!dy; and albeit man is elevated by his better part unto a more excellent knowledge, yet he cannot de-
Dav ID Perfecuted. IIs
fire it as he ought, becaufe hee cannot know it as it is.

David went unto the wilderneffe of Rachan, and underftanding that there dwelt neere thereabout a man exceed. ing rich in flockes and other poßef. fions, whofename was Nabal; bee fent unto bim on the day of Sheepfhearing, to demand fome reliefe of provifion and victuals: But Na bal not only denietls him, but with ill words provoking h:m, declaring his avarice, to be accompanied with malice.

T is an ordinary thing in denying of benefits to accompany the denial with injuries; I know not whether it bee to cloake their avarice with hate, or becaufe fuch men loving their goods as deerely as their lives, when one demands to have any of them, are incenfed with anger, as if he fought fo much of their bloud; or els that it comes to paffe becau!e

## in 6 David Persecuted.

because men in denying what is demanded, think they have made him their Enemy that 'demanded it, and framing him fuch in their imaginations, fpeake of him not as one that is become fuch, but as of one that is fo already. Peradventure alfo Nabal denies with arrogancy to accomplish Davids defire, doubting his guiltineffe might feeme to bee forme figne that he food in feare of violence, and to thew that be doth not feare it, himelfe in terms begins to ute ir.

David is incensed by the answer of Na bal, and rets forward to destroy him and all bis house. But Abigail, Nabals Wife, being a prudent and a beautiful woman, hearing of Da vids requeft, and her bushandsdevial, goes with many beafts laden with victuals to meet David, and beginneth with excuse of her HuTbands ignorance, and foolifhneffe. Shee entreats him to accept of the present
prefent Jhebrought, and pardonher Husband : And 10 David is ap. peafed.

V OOmen are of fo great force in perfwading, that it hath beene held all one to hearken to them, and to grant their requefts. Hee that forbad them to be brought up in learning, had an eye perhaps not only to their difficultie of underftanding, but alfo to their facility in perfwading. Hee that was judged by the Lord God to be the wifeft, made ufe of fuch an inftrument; and that tyrant who was written among the moft circumfpect, was afraid of this force. Women have alwayes delight joyned with their words, and where delight is, there is alfo perfwafion. If the undertanding doth not agree to it, the will confents: fo that when that which they fay canniot bee believed, yet they which have faid it mult not bee difpleated. Their teares are their Enthymems, their beauty is their fword: where they doe not procure love, there they move compaffion; yea, and fometimes they perfwade the better, becaure they

## in8 David Perfecuted.

they have no skill in perfwading: There is no cunning fufpected where there is no fcience, yet there is more thereof in their countenance than in all Rhetorick. It is lawfull to forgoe all fierceneffe in favour of a fex that is fomorous: The weakneffe of it makes us not ahmamed to lay down all our wrath to it, yea, rather makes him afhamed that doth not lay it downe.

David doth bleffe God asd Abigail, for having by ber prudence diverted bim from revenging hinelelfe of Nabal.

IT is a great good hap to bee taken off from a neceflity of revenging himelelfe. He that can divert it and doth not, deferveth great blame; hee that hindreth it, great commendation; and hemeriteth more that defireth to beío diverted. But there are many now a days defirous of fuch seceffities, which if they be but fmall, they feek to augment them, and faine fome when they finde none. They

## David Perfecuted.

account it a glory torevenge, and the name of revengefull, glorious. This is a proper art for thofe who having no Talents by which they make themelves knowne to bemen, will make themfelves known to be bealts; they know not how to make themfelves honoured, therefore they will make themfelves feared, as if reputation and feare were all one. The vulgar rout breed fuch kinde of people by applauding them, but fuch applaufes turne to their ruines, feeing the quarrels which begin among the greater fort are for the moft part quenched with the bloud of the meaner. Cities will never be rid of thefe bloud-thirfty compani. ons, till they ceafe from commending their bloudy proceedings, neither wil! the way to fuch falfe praife evet beftop. ped up, till the way to the true, thall be layd open; which then only will beef. fected, when Princes and States give place and occafion to their Subjects to make knowne their true valour, and reward them according to their due deferving.

## 120 <br> David Perfected.

Abigail returnes to Nabal, and because The findes bim drunken, the forbeares till the morning to (peace unto him, and then tells him what had paled; which when be had beard, his heart was dead within him as a fore, and within few dayes be dyes.

THy mould Nabals heart become dead, fecing his offence was pardoned? or rather why fhould not his heart be dead, seeing he had offended? David doth not capt him down, it is only his owne Conference. He that offends his neighbour unjuftly offends his own reafon, and although his neighbour hath pardoned him, the never pardons him : the revenge taken of him, is the remembrance of his offences. Nabal cannot believe that revenge to bee abolifhed, whole characters being blotted out of the memory of men, are written in heaven; for then are they written there, when they are ftrucke out here. He doth not perfectly pardon, who doth not pray God to pardon; which if he doe, hoe doth not thereby diminifh the offences,

## David Perfecuted. - I2I

offences, but in fome fort increafeth them. If the Iadges, whom the Holy Ghoft calleth gods, did refemble God in punihing of finnes, as they defire to be like God in fuperiority above others, there would not be fo much offending, and there would be more pardoning. A man hath no fooner forgiven an offence, but the Iudge alfo pardons it; yea,fomtimes alfo the Iudge hath abfolved before the party hath pardoned. That favage fierceneffe of never pardoning an enemy would foone be abolifhed, it their pardoning did augment the offences in the judiciary feats of men, as it doth in a fort before the Tribunall or high Iuftice of God. But when the offended pardoneth, the offences are written above, though here being remitted they are cancelled.

David taketh Abigail being a woman of fingular beauty and prudence to Wife, and Saul gives his danghter, who was firft the Wife of David, unto Phalti.

## 122 <br> David Perfected.

W $V$ Ho defires to marry to beauty, may peradventure meete with a Devill : for the Devill allo hath Come beauty. But he that defires to bee joyned with Prudence, if he marry not an Angell, yet hoe is furely married to an Angelicall veitue. Prudence is a-fire which converts all Antimony into me. dicine, makes her pleafing that's de-: form'd, makes her tolerated that is poore, and her quietly enjoyed that is faire : for it is a Bear that corrects the venome of beauty; It makes it majefticall, and not lascivious, and being majefticall it is the daughter of the radiant beames of Tupiter, not of Venus ; rather enforcing reverence, than inflaming defirc. He that fees her, conceits her a thing impoffible to obtaine, and the will never fixeth up: on impoffibilities; if it bee not fixed it reflects on the object, if it doe not reflect, it loves not, for the often refileactions are the producers of love.

The Ziphims goe to Saul, and adverlife him that David is in their de-
farts; and he goes to reekehim with 3000. shofen Souldiers.

CEE how the pride of Sast is not mitigated with the humility of $D$ at vid, perhaps becaufe the pride was joyned with intereit, and the humility with reputation. The proud man becomes meeke, not when his Enemy hath humbled himfelfe, but whien he himfelfe hath hambled him. That hamility that is begotten by feare, doth ever mitigate the pride that is not brutifh : he that believed otherwife might haply have beene deceived, by confounding the one with intereft, and the other with grearnefle of minte. The proud man will have his Enemy bow unto him; but if then when he boweth downe, his deeds lift him up, he doth not mitigate, but rather exalperate him, becaufe infteed of magnify ing him; hee deth affict and confound him. All the wife, yea, and wily men doe humble themfelves to him that perfecutes them; when their humility encreafeth their reputation, whichit alwayes doth when feperated from debility. The greatelt pride that may be found, goes clad in

$$
124 \text { DAVID Perfecmed. }
$$

the habit of humility; and oftentimes is not difcerned by others, but him onely againft whom it is imployed;and becaufe by the reft it is not difcovered, they cannot oppofe againft it without boing blamed.

David being enformed of Sauls arrivall, and baving gotten fome know-- ledge of his frength, calls unto him Achimelech and Abihnai; askes them who will goe with me into the Army of Saul, and Abinaianfreers, I will goe.
VVHen Princes conferre a degree of Honour on a fubject, they will make choice themfelves; but in a matter of danger, they ufe to leave him to his owne choice: and whereas the fubject thinkes to make his merit the greater, by how much it is the more voluntary ; the Prince on the contrary fometimes holds himfle leffe oblged to him whom hee hath leaft obliged. I blame not this proceeding, fo it be not of purpole to avoyd

## David Perfecuted. $\quad 125$

to be beholding, but to be affured of the fufficiency and love of the fubject. To expofe him to danger and to love him, doe not very well agree. To make one to offer himfelfe in a voluntary manner, is not fufficient argument of fuch affection, if without much entreaty his offer be accepted.

David and Abithai goc to the campe of Saul, where they finde the Gward, the King himfelfe, and all bis Souldiers afleepe.

THe Lord God ominarily in the effeas of the world fuffers his hand to be feene of them only that are very Tharp fighted, becaufe he works by naturall inftruments; yet fometimes alfo he will be feene even of thofe that are blind, bscaufe te workes by the fupernaturall arme of his Omnipotency. When there are operations perceived to bee contrary to the ordinary courfe, that the watchfull are found fleeping, that the prudent are overfeene; that the valiant are faint $F_{4}$ hearted;
I26 DavID Perfected.
hearted; there they that are well fighted difcerne the hidden finger of God, who when be intendeth the raine of forme house or kingdome, or any other place, takes from it thole that might fave it ; or otherwife alters them in fuck fort, that they oppose not his de. fignes: Sometimes allot taking away the mark of naturall things, be fends an Angels to bourne Cities, to deftroy Ar myles, and raifeth up Captaines, that with the light of a torch or a lamp make Cities fall downe ; and then there is no eye fo blinds, but feet therein the Almighty hand of God.

Abinhui would brave fain San!, Divid would not permit bim, but, takes away bis $J$ peare and bis. pot of water.

THo will wonder at David, that - having been as a Lion when he flew the Giant Goliath, he now thames himfelfe a lambs in faffing Same, to live, if he were a figure of that God,
who to the finner was a Lambe, and a Lion to the Devill. Hee that aimeth at a dignity, in hewing himfelfe fainthearted in obtaining it, will not prove couragious when hee hath obtained it. David did not forbeare to flay Saul for any reafon of State, but abtained from it for the reverence and feare of God. Where hath that man been found, that knew this peece of policy at any time? It is too finely wrought to be difcerned by the eyes of thole that are blinded with the paffions of defire to rule or revenge, untill having obtained the dominion or the'revenge they defired, their eyes happily arecleared ; then they begin to confider that which they hould have confidered before, they are afraid of the example which themfelves have begotten ; whence it came to paffe that many have revenged the death of thofe Princes, of which themelves have been the procutors. They are terrified in their feat of State, they hate their Scepter; as if it tinreatned violeat death to him that:treads on it or hold it : They ftand in fear of the farres that rule over that kingdome, as if the vanity of thofe

128: Day ID Perfecuiced.
were true, as it is molt false; who have beleeved that the violent conftellations of kingdomes, with a very little helpe of the Kings Horofcope had the power to kill them.

David calleth out to Abner, and reproves him for not having kept the King duly.

Know not whether this were good policy to provoke the Generall of the army, but I know that Abner after the death of Saul, was he that made all the war again David.

He complaines againe to Saul of bis being persecuted, saying, if God bath fared thee up against me, let him bee appeafed with Sacrifice; if men bave done it, accursed bee they of God.

## Day I d Perfecuted.

David with bis men goe to Achith, the King of Seth, which when Saul undersiood, hee left off purfuing bim.

IT feemes lawfull to fie among the Pa gans when there is no other way to fave himielfe, fo that hee live not like a Pagan; and he is not alwayes to bee bla= med, that hath recourfe to their help for the recovery or defence of his own eftate It hath beene fometimes alfo permitted to help them againft oiher Pagans, fo the help we yeeld them be in favour of reafon and right. But it Chall be alwayes recorded for a great fault to fuccour, to encourage, to move or to counfell the Idolaters to an Invafion of the ftates of true beleevers, for that were not to goe againft men, but againft God, to leffen his kingdome, and to enlarge the confines of the Devill.

David faith unto Achifh, 1 am not worthy to dwall in the bead City with thee.

## 134 <br> VAv id Persecuted.

thee. Appoint me, I befeech thee Some other place: then Achifhaffigned.him Ziklag.

DAvid withdrawes himelfe from the Court of King Achib; not because Courts are to be forfaken, but thee retires himfelfe, because his different re= ligion and great valour, would have made him furpeited and feared. I am not of their mind that blame and condemne the Court, it is the e true Paragon of varours men : there is no place where vice is fooner difcovered, and vertaemore rewarded. It is a light by which men hears are ferne and difcerned, yea, it is a moot clare eft to diftinguin naturall gold from that of Alchimy. Hee that hath great talents let him haften thither,: for there they are gloriouny spent and employed. Let him not regard the complaints of thole whole talents, how great foever they have benne, have not advanced them. It may perhaps bee found, if they were examined, that they were not printed with the fampe of prudence ${ }_{5}$, and fo of no value, because bee that had them could not utter them,

## David Perfecated.

or becaule he would have them goe for more than they were worth. Hes that excells in any art or fcience, if he have not withall fome eminent place in Court hee complaines that vertues are not regarded. Princes for the mo?t part both efteeme and reward all men according to the greatneffeof their quality, not of their ambition: and if any one complaine, it is thought he hath more of that than of the other. A great part of the errors in the world arileth hence, not becaufe every one doth not give place to his better, but becaufe every one doth nat know his betcer; andindesd, it is a difiealt thing to kno whim, bacrare he goes not alwayes clad in the famecloth. Man deceive themfelves in equivocating from a greatneffe, with an ad dition to an abfolute greatnes ; believing oftentimes, becaufe they are efteemed the beft in fome one thing, that therefore they fould be the beft efteemed. He only in regard he is the greatelt in his profeffion, hall bee in great repute above others, whofe profeffion fhall bee in eftimation abuve others.

David
I36 Dat id Perfected.

David with bis men goes forth of the City to Coyle and destroy certaine Idolatrous Countries, and returning to Achifh, makes him beleeve that be bath beene to endamage the Ifraelives; and the King thereupon is perfoaded that be might af lure himfolfe of David, believed that bee bad So fore provoked the Ifraelites that . bee could no more be reconciled.

Any Princes when they were grown jealous of the fidelity of a abject, have used the like manes to be Secured of him, and the chieffefamong Rebels doe commonly ground their hopes in putting thor that follow them in defpaire. Yet all foch rampiers are very wake, and eafily overthrowne, as foone as affaulted with the Engine of realtor and tate. It facilitateth pardons, makes offences to be forgotten, and covercomes all defires,becaure the define of dominion, is the frt begotten and eider of all the affections. The Princes that are wary and circumfpeat, doe think them-

## David Perfecuted.

felves only aflured of that faith which is either enforced, or intereffed.

The Philiftims prepare a great eArmy to goe againft Saul. Achifh inviteth David to goe with him, and hee accepts of his invitation.

Would not that this place Chould ferve for any example to any Chritian Princes, to accompany anyilnfidels in oppreffing the faithfull: Hee had no thought of bringing the Philiitims into the Land of I/rael, bu: hee was brousht into the poffeffion of that Kingdome by Achis, unto which God had clected him. The Philititims went not to fight againft the kingdome, but againft the King; as was clearely feene, when atter the overthrow given to Saul, they returned to their owne houfes, leaving $M_{c}$ phibofheth to rule and reigne in Ifrael.

The Philiftims pitch their Tents in Shunem

## 138. David Perfected.

Shunem, and Sulwith his Army in Gilbos. Saul bad all the. Magicians and South-fayers that bad apirits in their belly to bee paine: perbaps they had given out that the Kingdom fhould come into the bands of David. But bee fluid not long from seeking out the reliques of those whom he bad fo perfecisted: for being afraid when be bad sene the hoot of the Ptriliftims, be asked counsel thereupon of the Lord; and when be could fave no angiver, makes recurs ${ }^{e}$ to the Devill.

IT was fid by a Politician, that Devinears are a fort of men deceiving thole that have hope in them, unfaithfull to thole that command; which should al. ways be prohibited, and ever retained in his City. But how fhould they bee forbidden, and yet retained? onely because that they that did fo prohibit them, were the fame that alto retained them. There were tivo forts of profeffors in time part running the fam: fortune a-

$$
\text { David Perfecuted. } 139
$$

mong Princes. The cunning poyfoners, and the fortune Tellers: they kept fill thone fort that they might poyfon others, and fometimes did banifh them that they might not bee poyfoned by them themfelves. To thother, they ranne to know the Nativities of great Perfons : the Princes belike thinking by violence to enforce the fenfes, if at any time they fhould raife up a fubject to Reigne; yet they drove them away againe, left others in the Princes Nativitie fhould feeke out the time of his death, or Chou'd feeke the rather to procure it, fuppofing heaven and the Starres to bee favourable to it:

Saul therefore difguifed with two in his company, goeth to a womaz having a familiar Spirit; herefuscth and excufeth ber art, for fore of the King; but Saul fivearing that no harme foould come unto her, fhe by her skill raifeth up Samuel, as Saul hadrequefted; who (were it either an illu-

## 140 David Persecuted.

fin or a vifion) cleere it is, that being questioned by Saul, tells him what was to come.

TO feck to know things to come by meanes of the Devill, is a great errot: to feeke it by the flares, is fore a greater arrogancy ; by this men pretend a faience, by thither a revelation. The one we may yet know by the permiffive will of God, but the other paffeth our underftanding ; and be that thinkes by this meanes to know what is to come, pretends allo to bee God, for God onely knoweth the future without any revelatimon. But perhaps there is no other difference betwixt the fe profeffions, (feting afide the odioufneffe of the name)faving that in the one, men run voluntarily to the Devil; in the other, ignorantly. who knowes that thole Astrological figures, are not as the circles of Negro masers, and that those fame fignes, and thole fares have not a proportion correspondent with their Characters, by meanes of which, they bring the Devill fomtimes to foretell what is to come, but
ever to deceive them? And if perchance the Devill is hee that doth by fuch arts reveale it, why do they feeke unto him? If to get evill, it is a meere madneffe ; if to get fome good, it is to much fimplicity to believe that the Devill will be a minifter of any good.

Samuel faith unto Saul, that be, and bis fonnes, and a part of the people foill die in battell, becaule be fulfilled not the will of God in the victorie against the Amalekires.
$T$ He Prince is ofren the occafion of the fins of the people, \& the people thole of the Prince; the one in permitting, the other in applanding them. Sometimes alfo God chatteneth the people for the Princes finnes, not becauf: it hath demerited with them, but becaufe it hath fo deferved. It is true indeed that when his Divine Majefty fends the fithe of chaftifement, it cuts cowne the good as well as the bad; becaufe that which hee fends into the world, is not the fame which

## 142 David Perfecuted.

## which doth fever the Wheat from the darnell.

Saul fainteth at the bearing of Juch bitter newes, and afterward by the intreaty of the woman, with the perfwafion of his fervants, baving eaten fomewhat, returneth to bis Armie.

FT Ere are feene two contrary effects in one felfe lubject, faintneffe, and fortitude; Sawl feemeth to faint, when his heart failed at the hearing of his death foretold: again, he feems valiant when he returnes to his Army, in which hee knowes that the next day hee fhall dye. But haply feares may be like unto loves: as the fecurity of enjoying a thing that is defired, doth diminifh the defire, fo the affurance of falling into a thing that we feared, diminifheth the feare of it. Sauls bloud within him made fome fuden motion at that unexpected blow ; but he afterward reflecting on it with his undertanding, and imagining death as al-
ready
ready prelent, he difcharged his feare, but hath nothing to do with any other time," but with the future.

The Armies gather together, that of the Philiftimes in Aphek, the otber of the Ifraelites in Ifrael; but the Princes of the Philiftimes feeing David with Achilh, advifed bim to foind bim away, becaule bee could noway better than with their beads regqive the favour of his Kiug.

1 Ntereft is of fuch force with men in their operations, that it is accounted weakneffe to truft him, whole ineeref may move him to betray us. Sincere and plaine dealing hath nothing to doe in this cafe in matters of policy who fo prefuppofech it in any, is fometimes des eived; and-becoufe he is fometimes feceiv'd, he doth never prefuppofe it, It annot bee believed withoat makng ome errour in policy, or withowt fome arrour already made. He that makes ufe of it after long experience doth not erre, G

## 144 DavI d Perfecuted.

 yet: erred then when hee madeexperiencepfit.
## Achifh although David had not beene

 with himabove fixe moneths, ऽaith that he had binwith him. fome years, to make it beleeved that if bee had beene evill, bee fhould bave known bim.1T is not altogether impoffible to refraine nature a long time, but it is fo in the utmoft confines of poffibility. There is requifite therunto a perpetual affiftance judgement; nature is ready to move according to her inclination, if the be not alwayes with-held: and if through hepadlefneffe or wearines fhe be left unto. her felfe, fhe falls like a fone to her own center. Herchence comes that little truth which is foind in Atrologicall predictions, or rather which wee make them have ; becaufe our inclination is a mover that continually worketh in us, and doth not alwayes findea continuall. refiltance. That which is violent is faid
to be of little continuance, not only for the neceffity in him thatufeth the violence tobe al wayes working; but alfo becaufe he is therewith fo wearied, that either wearineffe or fatiety makes him to ceafe.

David Seemes to bee grieved that Achifh will not take him with him, not knowing that be bath given hims any occafion to the contrary: Achifh anfwers that in bis eyes hee is an Angell of God, but the Princes of the army are not pleafed in bim.

Oe here a means how one may lofe his inward familiarity with a Prince and get not his favour. The conlpiracy of great ones where thery beare great fway, undoubtedly either doth ruin the favovrite, or trouble the fate, whenfoever he thatis greatef with the Prince, is not the greatef among them. In fuch a cafe mien would not bee afiad

## 146 <br> David Perfecated.

med to bow unto him, to whom though he were not the favourite, hes ought to bow: and there would be opened unto them a clear way without any dirty flattery, or thorny danger, to runne a happy courfe between the obfequioufneffe, and odious liberty; but this feldome or never happens: whether by the cunning of Princes, or by nature, I know not. This Art teacheth them that the greateft in the fate may not bee called into inward favour without danger of dominion, from which hee is but one pace diftant. Nature teacheth to lift up the lowly, and to beat downe the mighty: aed this nature is dictated of God, who raifeth the poore from the dunghill to place him among Princes, even with the Princes of his people: It is fignified by the ftarres, whore radiation is then thought to be great, powerfull, and glorious; which lifting men from loweftate, doth feate them with Princes. It is finally manifefted in the earth, whiles it favourably cherifheth and raifeth up thoie plants that are not wrapt in gold, that is refplendent, but buried in the bafenefle of the foyle that is uncleane.

$$
\text { David Perfecuted. } 147
$$

What inftruction may then be given to favorites for efchewing the hatred of great ones? The wittieft politicians leemes to commend fuch a fubject, as contenting himfelfe to bee the greatelt of the great ones in authority about the Princes, cared not to exceed the meaner ones in dignity: I take this to be want of knowledge, how to make ones belt benefit of the fortunes that befallone, or rather an abufing of them: and that it is no way fufficient fo extirpate envy, to become the objects of compaffion. Hethat thinkes riches and honours are envied, is deceived : It is the cemmand. the applaufe, the oblequioufnefle, that they bring with them : if there were feparated from the King, it were no defirable thing to be a King. A very imall reverence, and a very little place, is fufficient to latisfie what ourbodies require : but the whole world is not enough to quench the thirft of the mind; which ftands allo with reafon, becaufe the body may eafily finde his object in a bodily world. But the mind which is a fpirit, never findes it where there is no fpirit. It deceives it felf fometimes

## 148 David Perfecuted.

in running with the body after fome bodily thing, as toward a proper object; but no fooner is the fame obtained, but the errour is difcovered. Thofe pleafing taftes which fome altogether fenfuall do account but as fmoak, which are the obfequioufneffe, the reverences, the applaules, thefe are the greatelt food to the minde, becaufe thefe are the lealt corporeall.

There are a thoufand other precepts written for favourites, both to defend them from the hatred of the great, and from every other occafion that might worke their overthrow. Some alfo I could adde which are not mentioned by others, bur becaufe they are all vaine and frivolous, I will not fill up the page with fuch vanities and weakneffes: I will fay one onely thing, being the truet and fecureft courfe to maintaine himlelfe in the Princes favour, which may well be performd, and may well be fpoken of;yet can it not be learned nor taught, which is, to preferve alwayes the love of the Prince, and the manner how io preferve it. It is true, that the favourite never falls without fome caufe, but the fame caufes have

## Davio Perfecuted.

not alway the fame cffects: for fomtimes they are furmounted by an affection, grear ter than their owne, if this flands frrm anifure, therecan be no danger; if this Arinkes, then the ruine is at thand: not becaufe he falls without caufe, but becaufe 'tis impoffible not to give fome caufe, and then the leffer have more force than at another time the greater would. A conftellation which would farce have caufed a frople tertian in youth (by confent of thofe that write thefe vanities in $A$ : Atrology) is fufficient to kill one in his decrepit age. Hee that wculd not have his love decine, let hi,n held both his eyes alwayes fixed upon the Prince, never depart from him, never fecke any other bur bim; for as foone as heeturnes his eyes to him!elfe or others, hee is undonc. His greatneffe, his affections, his pleafures, and delights, mult bee in his Prince. Neither let him thinke that by this means he may miffe of preferments, but rather that hee fhall be fure of them, and peradventure with leffe envy. Hee that poffefferh things that are fabject to envie, and takes no delight in them, is rather to be pittied, than envied. But

## 150 David perfecuted.

who is hee that wi'l doe fo; faving the man that is full of affection, and moft tenderly enamoured of his Lord. It is a thing that cannot bee reduced into Art, though it be eafily knowne. Affectation differs much from affection, which if he hath not, let him not imitate; for fuch imitations are odious in the fchoole of love : they that will maintaine themfelves in the Princes favour with Art ${ }_{3}$. their Art failes them, and they then faile with their Art.
 returnes with bis men to Ziklaga whereby they finde that the Amalekites bave burnt the City, and carried away all the Inhabitants prifoners, with Divids Wives alfo; and the people therewith enraged, would bave floned him.

IT is no marvell that this multitude would have ftoned innocent David: men being angry, feeke fome fubject on which

$$
\text { David Perfecuted. } 151
$$

which they may difcharge their paffion; yet if they finde not thofe that offend them, they fuppofe whomfoever they meete to bee the fame; yea, and fometimes when there appeares before then no other, on which they may revenge themfelves, they beat the pavement with their feet, and the Walls with their fifts. And this is no fuch folly as many doe imagine, but an inftinct of nature; which feeling the heart fuffocated by fo great a quantity of fiery pipits, feekes to eafe her felfe by diverting fome part of them in the exercifing of fome act:on.

The paffions of the people are too $\mathrm{di}=$ flemperate going alwayss to extremes, which is not proper to the pecple, as they area people, but as they are a multitude; in which every one hath his particular paffion, and participateth alfo with that of the others; and with that participation increafeth his owne. I have fometimes doubted, (but I fay it is not a thing undoubted) that in this increafing the contracting at laf of the firits hath fome part : confiderine tiat a multitude of people gathered together, finds no

## 152 Day id Perfecuted.

thing to flay it from going whither is may go without feparating, and whither they would not goe with leffe danger if they were feparated : from whence may be taken an inftruction for them that wil fortifie themflves in a place that they have regard to accommodate in fuch manner, that the fortification it felfe may be able to withftand the incurfion of a multitude ; or otherwife, not think their ftrength fafficient to maintaine it with neither fire nor thot,

David askes coundell of the Lord therupon what fhall be done, and fuddenly turnes to follow the .feps of the Amalekites,

THis is the beft way to withdraw himfilfe out of danger to divert an angry multitude to the true object of their anger, that thereby they may forfake the falle.

## David Perfecuted. $\quad 153$

They finally fint out the Amalekites, fight with them, and overcome them: recovering the prey with the Prifoners: and the spoile which they $b: d$ taken, David will bave divided with tho e that kept the baggage, and were not at the fight.

THe Capiaine of a male contented company, had need bee both valorous, and circumpeet : that heat that firres up a mu'titude, whether for love to their leader, or anger againtt their Prince, groweth foone cold, and then gives place to a comparion, to which firceedeth repentance; the confequence wheroof, is cither the killing of their Captaine, or the abandoning of him: Neither is itfufficient for the efchewing of fuch a danger, to have once gotten a great reputation: time confumeth it, and how great fuever it be, reduceth it to nothing. It is necellary to linke it into a chaine, not fuffering the report of a great action to ceale, without renewing it with another as great or greater. David becaufe his flying from Saul inight

## 154 David Perfecuted.

take from him the reputation he had gotten in fubduing the Giant, no fooner begins to flie, but he fights and overcomes the Philiftimes, that had facked Keilah; and becaufe that flight is an argument of feare, and that teare brings a loffe of reputation, hee makes it knowne that he could twice have killed the King, to give his flight the title of reverence, and to take away the imputation of feare. Afterward -being returned to Ziklag, that the malecontented might not have leifure to make any reflections on him to his harme ; and defirous to maintaine his reputation, hee oftentimes with honour and profit to himfelfe affuiteth the Infidells; and finally vanquifheth the Amalekites, and recovereth that reputation, the diminution whereof, had brought him into the perill of being toned.

The Philitimes fight with the IfracIites, and bave broken the body of their Army, and Jlaine three of the Rings Sonnes; the frength of the whole charged Saul, when be twrning

## David Perfected. 155

to his Armour-bearer, prayes him to kill bim, that he might not be a deriSion to the uncircumcifed; which when be refused Saul Jets bis owne Sword against bis breast; and fatling on it; kills himfelfe.

I Know not how the defcription of Death to be the utmoft of all terrible things, fhould be underwood: If in this life the utmoft of all delectable things be not to be had, why Mould the utmoft of the terrible? Oise of the contraries cannot bee admitted, but the other malt also be granted. Now to live, not being the utmost of delectable things, eacheth that to dye is not the utmost of the terrible. The not finding in this our world any object that is the lat t of deleitable and of terrible things (if we will not fuppole the powers without an otject) makes us believe that it is in the other world, and in that other world, is God feene and not feene. But hes that described death the lat of all terrible things, meant it of things in this world; which would be true, if spoken of the lat

$$
156 \text { David Perfeculed. }
$$

in number, and not in weight: for 0 therwife, if it be fuch in it felfe, it muft then bee alway fuch unto all: And yet we read of many men that have imbraced it, io efchelh fome other thing, which we mult nee Is beleeve was more terrible to them. He that wonders at a refolution fo extravagant as makes a mankill himfilfe, may marvell at nature alfo which being fometimes terrified at death doth prevent it.

The Armour-bearer of Saul, Secing what bis Lord had done, drass es out likewife bis frord, and kills bimfelfe. Some W'riters are of opinion that this was Doeg the Edomite, Sauls fav urite; who left he flowidd be punified by bis fucceffor, killed bimfelfe.

THe Favourites of a Prince that hath
1 a fucceffour, if they dye not before Saul, yet they dye often with Sayl. I know not how to feere them from this Rock: there hathbeen one, that feeing no other remedy, made at the Soveraign-
David Perfecuted.
tie it felfe, and was jult there deftroyed. There hath been alfo that turned his back to the Weft, and fate his eyes toward the Eaft, and towards thofe rayes that wou!d have bin deadly to him, had not that Sun bin then under the line of the Horizon. As the fonnes of Princes cannot endure any companion in domination, no more will Princes in their love. He that thinks there is no envie betwixe the Father and the fon, is deceived. The honours done to the fon, if they increafe that of the father, doe rejoyce him ; but if they diminifh his, theymake him furrowfull; which becaufe it falls out but feldome, men fuppofe there is no fuch th ing. When the favcurite hath hope that by courfe of Nature he fhall furvive the Prince, it is a hard matter for him not to have aneye to the future ; toward which if he caft a look, he lofeth that which is prefent s but hee deferves no favour, that defires or thinkes to out-live his Lord. The greato eft felicity that may befall the former, (it being not lawfull for any viotently to charge upon death) would be to end his life jutt when the latter, dieth. It is hard to dye before him, becaufe it is no cafie
158
David Perfecuiced.
thing to leave one that is his Patron, and his Love. Hee that blames Princes for having favourites, would have them inhumane and vile: What thing is a man that harh no love? or wherein may a Prince fhew gracio:ss unto others, or fee himflele his owne greatneffe, but in advancing of others? and how or why fhould he advance them, if he doth not love them? Would they have him alwayes masked ? would they not allow him any, to whom he may untrip him. felfe, and difcover the fecrets of his heart? He that will give to Princes (that which farely they ought to bave) leave to defcend fometimes from their throne of Majefty, aud to confer their inward cogitations with any one, he mult allow a favourite: If the Prince lay afide his Majefty, withall he would grow contemptible; if his fecrets fhould be imparted unto many, they could not be fecrets; but. if he be familiar but to one, open but to one, he is then the favorite. It is wifhed by them that are not beloved above the reft, that the Prince would love all alike: but why Gould he love all alike, fince he is not beloved himelfe of all alike? A wel devoted fubject ought to be grieved
that any one loveth his Lord more than he, and not that his Lord loves another more than himfelfe. This would bee a defire to tyrannize over the affections of Princes, which men ought to reverence. He that could make his love more fervent than that of the favorite, might peradventure make himfelfe the greater favorite a but commonly men five to un* horfe him by malice, and not by vertue, because it is more eafie to envie, than to love. Give moe leave aldo further to afforme (if without offence I may) that it cannot bee any blame to have a favorite, undine man will ny that Chris eur Lord Was to bee blamed, whore favorite was Saint fobs.
One passing by chance need unto Saul, who longed to die, and asked bim whence be was; and the other an/wering that bee was an Amalekite: Saul prayetl him to kill bim, which be excufeth.

The unspeakable providence of God ! fee peradventure permitted not Saul to kill himielfe, he confented that his fin could kill him. One of the

## 160 <br> David Perfecuted.

Amalekites, whom againft the will of God he had faved alive, God will have to put him to death. That finner fooke for all finners, and fpake divinely, that faid, My finne is nlwayes againft me. We have no enemies, but we make fome nor is Sawl alone flaine by his finne, for there be but few men that are not alfo killed by theirs. And it is very parvicular, that one particular frould kill them; Feeing it was the fame that brought death into all the world: O how plearant, and how pro. fitable are the precepes of Tod! He is a Phyltian (under favour be it (poken) mot only for the foule, but for the body alfe. He hath left us better rules in a few leaves to preferve our health, than are contained in the great volumes of the bookes of the Gentiles.
King Saul dietb after bee bad reigned many yeares, and with the King, dieth a great part of the people, wh ch had demanded a King.
$F$ Avours are not therefore demanded of God that he may doe them, but becaufe hee will doethem; bee doth them by meanes of our prayers: they are obtained with the Optative, not with the

## David Perfecuted.

Imperative mood. He that wil command them, deferves then onely to bee heard when it is to his harme ; to have beene heard to teach him that is God, neither to bee taught, nor to bee commanded. Wherefore then it was that Saul did lofe his life, and wherefore the Kingdome of Ifrael went out of his Progeny, is eafily relolved by them, who omitting the manifeld other caufes, have recourfe to that alone, which is the firt, and chiefe, and prime caufe : from whofe well, all the reft proceed. But why God willeth the deltruction of Kings and Kingdomes, would be eafioalfo to hew, were ie not the will of God, is not al wayes effective, but fometimes alfo permifive: He wils that fuch as forfake him, lofe their Kingdomes; and that they that follow him, obtaine them. Moreover, how and when it comes to paffe that he permitteth fomtimes thofe that follow him to be abafed, and thole that abandon him to bee exalted, I doe not know, and others peradventure know as little. Thofe Princes then that are not in Gods favour, let them alwayes feare, how prolperous foever they are: Being not able to alledge any

## 162 D. 1 vid Perfecuted.

caufe of their happineffe, they mult needs be afraid; if they be great, they know not why they are fo: and it is to be doubted that fuch greatneffe cannot long endure; whereof no caufe can be given for which it began. Hee who hapning to co ne into the houfe of a fortunate man, did fuddenly depart thence, certainly he meant it not of them that God maketh happy and fucceffefull, but of thofe whom God permitteth fo to bee. The ruine of Sisl cams peradventure of his own great profperity, his being froma bafe eftate exalted to a Kingdume, confirmed and fetled therein with happy fucceffe; in ftead of making him the more devout, made him more confident, yea, more rafh and unadvifed. Let us not make it lawfull to ferve him the leffe, who hath profpered us to the end; we fhould ferve him the more, as if the gifts or graces which God vouchfafeth us were but for our pleafure, and not for his glory. A great fort of men offend their God in their pro: fperity, and pray unto him in theiradverfity; yet is he fill the fame God, when hee delivereth u; ou: of mifery and diItreff:, and when he overturaeth our fur-

# David Perfecuted. <br> 163 

## - $=$

tunate courfes and proceedings. It may feeme peradventure, that to deliver out of difafters doth more manifeft the Di vinity, than to abafe profperous fortunes; whence it is that men are more confident in his mercies, than fearefull of his vengeance. There is no man how wicked foever, but doth fome good thing wherunto hee afterward afcribes the caufe of his good fucceffe, and equivocating betweeme the reward, and the grace given him, hath no feare of lofing what he pretends to have deferved. On the contrary, there is no man fo good, but he committeth fome evill whereunto for the moft part he attributeth the caufe of his milfor une, and equivocating between Gods chaftifing and his exercing of him, fends up fometimes his fupplications to God, when he fhould rather have fent thankfgivings; as if the world which is the place of meriting and demeriting, were the place alfo of rewarding \& punifhing.
To conclude, let us pray bis Divine Majefty, that be will be alrodies pleafed te end the perfecutions of the Davids, with the death of the Sauls: And all to the glory and bonour of his great Name; in robich I exd this Book, as I defire alfo to exd $m$ y life. F IN I S.


## 

> THE CHIEFE
> EVENTS OF
 SPAINE, In the yeare 1639 Written
By the Marqueffe Virgilio Maluezz ${ }^{i}$, one of his Ma. jelties Councell of Warre.

Tranflated out of th'Italian Copy' by RobertGentilis Gent.

> LONDON,

Printed by T.W. for Humphrey Mofeley, at the figne of the Princes Arms in St. Partls Church-yard, 1647.

## To the right Honourable

 Edward, Earle of Dorfet, Lord Buckhurt, Knight of the mof Honourable Order of the Garter, Lord Chamberberlaine of his Majefties Honßold, and one of bis HonourablePrivie Comncell. $S I R$,


Have prefumed to prefent this Tranflation to your Lordfhips view, and fend it into the world under your Patronage. And though my felfe bee not worthy fo great a Patron, yet the Author Count Virgilio Maluezzi his Workes generally are of fuch efteem, that a Noble and honourable Penne in this Kingdome hath vouchfafed to Englifh fome part of

## To the Reader.

them. And this particular Hiftorie is fointer-woven with feverall grave politick Difcourfes, learned and pithy Speeches upon fundry occafions, that I queftion not but your Lordfhip may find fomewhat in it worthy your reading at vacant houres. This, and your ever knowne love to learning, thewed by your daily favourscontinually flowing upon Scholars, hath encouraged mee to prefix your honoured Name to thefe my endeavours: in which though I come farre fllort of Maluezzi's incomparable ftile, or the honourable Tranflators facunditie, I fhall moft humbly befeech your honour to caft a gracious afpect upon it, which may encourage mee to attempt higher things, if fo great a one fhall deigne to accept of this fo fmall prefent. So praying God ever to bleffe gou, \&z all your honorable family, I humbly ref, Your Honours moft devored and humble fervant,




## To the Reader.



Eader, 1 confofse, I use my uttermoft skill to not write a Hi . forie with a plane narration and that $I$ employ the astermost of mine rssderffarding to Set it out, ir deming to me to bettye daric of bim who is to leave unfolded to poferitie the noble remembrance of the renowned deeds and admirable actions of the greatest King in the world. The Tufcanc aires the Ruggierie and Romances, oo other touches, Songs and Dances, are playd in the fleets, and Market places, and also in the Royal Palace. The Merchant, the Citizen the Gentleman, and the King. aldo goo clothed in Sike; but those which are play in the Royal Pallace, are playd leifurely with A 3 learned.

To the Reader.
learned counterpoints touched with Forraigne daintineffes, ftps, quavers, accents, and Spirits. This place on molt noted dayes clotheth the Kings perfon, in a babit woven with gold and gemmes, embroidered and garnifhed; and so great is the art and workmanfhip, that the leaf thing that is beard in the one is the Buffo, and that is Sene in the other is Silke. If Royal things are fo different from City ones, who Shall blame my Hiftorie onely for, the manner of it? Surely of the subject is good, I have gives it fate, and embroidered it; if Gad, I have put it out of tune, and bandied it un. If Hiftories be written to give inftraction inflrwiting or teaching is not to take off the course and bring to an end, a thing needfull to bee done both for thofewhich read them curioufly, and for them who foray stem attentively, cither to change visix desires, or give Satisfaction to thole as are well regulated. So that be is queftionleffe praife-worthy, who taketh a man out of the ordinary way, which is long and broad, and condacteth him through one that is not darke but Bort, full of flangeneffe, sentences, expreflons, which. Sometimes

## To the Reader.

times teach, and fometimes delight and which at Sometimes mingled together doe both teach and delight.

If I have dose fo I have fulfilled my defire, and peradventure my duty; But because it would be pride in me to affirms l bad doric it, it Shall be a sufficient excuse for me, I have a desire to doe it, that if I be not praised, I may at leafs be suffered.

A 4 The


## The Italian Printer to the

 Reader.He Author is resolved to print this Soke in bis one natural tongue, in Regard of Some confider able errors, with change of the Sene, which pas ed in the Spanifb Imprefion at Madrid through the Printers carelefneffe, which happenedwhilf be wows absent from that Court.

# The chiefe Events in theSpanifh Monarchy. 

 Fflitted Exrope weepes (for many ages) from time to time at her ruines, either becaufe God doth moft chaAtife the carelefneffe of thofe whom he loveth beft, and fo it is good will; or hecaule he moft puniheth the faults of them who are molt bound urto him, and fo it feemes revenge : he either trieth as me:citull or fcourgeth as wrathfull. Sometimes fhe feeth her Inhabitant; bloudy themfeives in civill warres, and oftentimes the feeth her land overHowne with barbarous Nations. ')ur bitterneffe calls fimplicitie Barbarime and him harbarous, who is nor tedious of other mens affaires; who is content with his owne. as longas it is able to majntaine him; who to offer villence, vill firt have it offered to himfelfe ; who geerh againft a man through a defire of preferving him-

$$
45
$$

felfe
felfe, and not through greedinetfe of growing great ; who flayeth another to preferve his own life, who invadeth Countries to get a divelling place ; valorous without cunning; hardy without de* ceit, as if Nature were worfe then Art, and he beft who much knoweth, when much knowledge ferveth him to doe the greater hurt.

Warre was once more terrible to Na tions when it was moved againft them to divell in the Country, then when the aime was domination; The one; was againft all, the other againft one in lofing, the one obliged to change a malter, the other to leave being one. Now adayes alfo the worlt would be our leader, if our lamentable times with a moft evill corrparifon did not juftifie it. The Countries were more fortunare, the men leffe evill. The necelfity of living pricked men forward and not the greedinefie of commanding, nor the hatred of him that conmanded. The land changed its Inhabitants, it di $\$$ not lole them, men did not deltroy the houfes where they meant to dive!l, they did not make the land barren which was to nourifh them, they nenpled

## in the Spariifh Monarchy: $\quad 3$

peopled ir, and did not lay it wafte, and it did renew it, more then ruine it; Then was Europe a prey; but to men, now it is a prey to the Sword, Fire, Famine, and Peftilence ; warre taking the dominion away from one, and not gaining it to the other, if fo be command is meant over men, and not over buried carkaffes which are turned to dult ; over fruitfull and abounding plaines, and not a defertburnd, unmanured, and barren Countrie.

In thefe turbulent motions a deplorable, times came in the yeare one thoufand fix hundred thirty nine, the fire of diffentions burning more then ever, and like Mount e Etna, hewing no figne of going our, as if it alfo had its Scillaes and Cbiribdies, which devouring the wealths of Kings and Nations, did feed upon bloud and treafure.

Germany was deftroyed, full of civill warres. The French overcome; but not weakened, nor mortified, thought upon revenge. Great Britaise as laft in the world, was rather then forgotten, referved for the lalt beames which made an influence of warre over Europe, and now feeling the dammages of it, fought for a remedie.

## 4 The chiefe Er'ents

remedie. The ftate of the Aultriacall Monarchy was various; Flanders victorious, but not fecure; Spaine iriumphant and threatned; The aftaires in Burgundy dangerous, in Brafill doubtiul, in Germaxy adverfe ; Weymar poffeffed of Brifack, the Swede of Bobensia, the Turkifh armies ready to move, the Hans cownes wavering, the Switzersirrefo'ute; The Fleet fet upon by the tiollanders, and though nor overcome, yet hindered and ftaied. In vain did the Catholick King defire peace, withftood by the Rebels obtinacie, the enemies greedinefs, \& agreement of their Officers. Thele not being able to bee governed but by the violence of motion, and the other not fatisfying, fome their rage,fome their envy, but with con:juefts of neiv Cities and Kingdoms, did already make eafie thirg; feeme difficu: with trange pretences, and difficu things. eafie with new tributes, levies, and Engines.

In the meane time cine body of $\mathrm{C}_{\text {hri- }}$ fendome, infirme, languifhing, and hure in its mott folid parts co fumed like an Etick, either finding no Phyfician, or wanking a remidy. It feemed becaufe

## in the Spanifb Monarchy.

because of the Charpneffe of the feafon to reft, and accumulate matters to kindle a new paroxifme. The motion did not cease, paling trim the body to the head, from the heart to the mind, which partly difquieted, partly neceffitated; ftudied a: 1 meanes to trouble the bodies, and tire up armed.

In France the Officers difcourfed of making new conquelts in Flanders of making fire the affaires of Germany; of troubling Spaine by Sea and by Land, litthe reflecting upon the bufineffe of Itair, where they weighed not the loffe of final places, and thought time long in conquering great ones. That in the mean time the Spanifh Army would decrease, and theirs increate. That they would goe to relieve paces, and force their enemies either to give over what they had undertaken with flame, or fight with danger. That they fhould gaine in Flanders, and in Bxrgundie, and what finilter accident foever fhould happen, they efteemed not the loffe of a place in lialy confiderable (beyond which they imagined thole powers could not reach) they having fo many there,

## 6

fo that they thought it impoffible to be counterpoifed, much more to be overcome.
In Spaine were very different thoughts, they looked upon the affaires of Italie, as their chiefe fcope. That it was good to goe with great ftrength where the reward was grear, the oppofition fmall. The dates which they fer in Piemont would be fufficient to bring foorth olive trees. That to be the molt fenfible part of Esrope. Thither to be called by men, and invited by fortune, and if the one did fhew themfelves favourable, and the orber fhould prove profperous, the King of Eranse his conquefts would be counterpoifed, and he would be called into that Province where he moft feared, and be diverted from that where he had molt hopes.

They were not careleffe of the defence of their other States: the provifions for Flanders were great both of men and money: Foure Millions and a halfe of filver; Seaventhoufand Foot at the Groixe ready for to go ; an Army of Germans under the command of Count Picolomini, all old Souldiers, and new Levies in the

## in the Spanifh Monarchy.

Country. Hol fatia and Burgundia were to be releived with an Army under the Command of Don Francefco di Melo. In Spaine, Cantabrea was mads fure with foureteene thoufand Horfe and Foote who afifted it. And for a fupply of the Forces in the County of Ronciglione there were great Levies appointed to be made in that Province. A Tertia of IValloones which was comming out of Flanders, the Italian Infantrie which the gallies of Spaine, Scicilie, Naples and Gexon were to bring over in the Spring. Now for to keepe the Mediterranean Sea, and the Ocean, there fhould bee, the Navies which hould come from Carthagena and Cadiz, that which was at the Groine, and the Ships of the Fleet which was expeted out of the Indies. And to fecure themfelves totally from the threatnings of mightyFleets which were preparing in Britanie, the Coalt of Spaine was all furniGred, with Men, Ammunition, and Provifion. Providing for Land affaires as if they wanted defence by Sea; And thinking upon the Fleet at Sea, as if they could not defend themfelves by Land.

A vittcrie obtained againft the Hollan-

## 8 Thechiefe Events:

der at Sea gave a beginning to this years conquelts, an enemy of a long time, and yet domefticall ; almolt'at home, : and therefore continuall. .

Some DunkirkShips were to gee to the Groine to take in fome Spanith Infanterie, they went to Mardick' to joyne with the reft having fought with the emie, who ltrorg with a Fleet of feaventeeme faile all of ftrength came to befiege them at. the mouth of the haven. The Generall Michael d'Orno, though unequall in frength, yet fuperiour in courage, being not able to endure the rebells infolence, with a profperous ivind came forth of Mardick anl fet upon them three times. The firft time though for a little fpace they fought generoufly, yet the Holla'nder made fome thew of giving back, the fecond he gave back the third he fled and getting ints their owne harbours left a moft glorious viEtory to his Majeflies forces which joyfully, being but eight fhipsftrong furrowed the waves to gather the fruires, many promifing them the domition of the ()cean yeelded by tie tiollander fhut up and weakened.

## in the Spanifh Monarchy.

But who is the Mafter of the Ocean? It is not overcome, though in it one overcommeth, yea he often is conquered by the Sea, who hath conquered man. He that was overcome fled, and the Sea is overcome by flyingit. He that overcommeth fighteth, and who fighteth with the Sea loofeth by it:

There arofe the mof horridelt tempeft that was in the memory of th'eldeft men, it feattered the fhips \& tore them, fo that with much toile, and almolt by miracle they came into harbcur, fome at Oftend, and fome at Duskirk, without rudders, failes, or malts, more like reliques of a fhipivrack then Thips fled from the injury of the waves.
I could note to make you bend the eyebrowes the frangenefle of ir ; there being but very few hoares betivixt the rejoycing with triumph and the bewayling of loffes, if I would therein follow the tracks of a wife man who for an adnirable particularitie of the Sea cried out, that in the felfe fame place Thips were one day playing and fporting and caft away the next. As if the Land did not produce fuch effe?ts, which are not thought

## 10 <br> The chiefe Events

thought of nor obferved, becaufe they are more frequent. Who feeth not that in the felfe-fame bed, where man taketh his beft reft,and where he enjoyeth fometime amorous, fometime Matrimoniall delights, bee a fo lets forth his laft and vitall fpirits and breathings with paine and horrour amidlt tormenting forrowes?

The Marqueffe of Fwextes care did get the fhips mended, and fhipping two thoufand Walloons in them tor the ! Groigne, caufed them to fet faile.

The Enemy was returned powerfull within fight of the Harbour, out of which his Majefties Thips came, but not with happy fucceffe, for fome run aground, and other for want of wind could not get out; there were but five that fought. Michael d Orno ler upon the Holland Admirall with fuch fierceneffe, that he had almolt funke her, Thee Thunned the boarding, and prefently fled with the reft of the fhips, and in the flight met with two of the Kings fhips. The Sea grew calme, the Captaine and the Admirall runne on ground, fo that the enemy was left with the two Chips, playing upon them with

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. II

their Ordnance, but ivould not adventure to boord them. So here were tivo great vi\{tories, which the Kings Forces obtained againft the Rebels, the one was counterpoifed by too much wind and the other alnoft changed for want of wind.

The Captaine got off, and all the relt of the fhips but the Admirall; the enemys battered retired to their owne Ports for reliefe, and the Kings Chips so Mardick and Duskirke and from thence after they ivere mended they went away with their Walloons, and arrived fafely into Spaine, where the Cardinall Infanta writ in what diltreffe Burguady was, Weymer being come into it and having taken Pontaglier, and Joigri, by meanes wherent he cut off that Province from all reliefe of Armes and provifions from the Swit. zers.

His Majefty fent money, and order to the Marqueffe of Leganes, that he Chould athit them with men.

In the mean time Prince Thomas was extraordinarily importunate at Court, to get leave to goe and affilt the bufineffe of Italy. That his Country did burne, that the Government ivas fivayed by a palfio-

## 12 <br> The chiefe Events

nate woman, a's unable Priace, and Officers wonne, bought, hindered, and forced by the French. That the lawes. gave him and the Cardinall the tuition. Thathee could not juftifie to the world his ftay in Flanders to looke upon the flames. Hee promifed his Majelty fruitfull astions, and tha the likewife promifed to himfelfe from his Majefty, juftice and love, it hee Thould have recourfe to his Clemencie, and great affiltance, if there were need of power. That he hadmany intelligences, and that he was called thither, by his frien Is, malecontents, convenience, obligation, and hope.

Every one did not applaud this going into Italy, many believing it could doe no good, did prognolticate great dammage might enfue thereupon. The ma'econtents within, hewed every thing to be eafie for them as went out, becaufe they fhould trouble the State; and there made every thing feeme eafie to the King, wherein chey might affift him, promifing themielves more then they could performe, and promifing more then they knew they could performe. Force of Armes, nor intelligence of Princes could

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. I3

not gaine fo many places to his Majefty, as the Dutcheffe defpaire might give unto the King of France. True it is, that her reafon of State is not that the fhould deliver them into the hand of the French, and that how in cafe the affection of Sifter fhould perfivade her to it, the love of a Mother would diffivade her from it: But if fhe fhould imagine that they mult be lolt, fhee would fooner fall into the armes of a Brother, then under the feet of her Kinfmen. Convenience is the reafon of State, and they are all councerpoifed while a flate remaines, but it being lolt, revenge takes the place of conveniencie, and rage the place of reafon; The future is not difcourfed upon, onely the prefent is hated, neither doe they confider which is the beft, when all are bad. The fick man, whileft he hopes to obtaine health, patiently endures thirft, hunger iron, and fire, but if he once falls into difpaire, he abhorres the Phyfician, and hates the remedies worfe then the difeate. The po.vers of the Spaniard untill that time to have feemed to the Dutcheffe to be againlt the French, her ftate to ferve for a field to wrath, and not for

## 14 <br> The chiefe Events

a reward to victories. If fhe fee the Princes of Savoy with thofe forces the will think them to be againft her. And whereas before in cafe of loffe, the Kirg of Spaines more moderate mind, did promife her reftitution ; the title of Kinfmanmight deceive her, and the jult sitle of the King of France; and of both thefe things did affure her the emulation which was between them, and the agreement betweene the Princes of Europe. And the might now doubt that in this third, the contraries might agree, the emulation might be appeared, the Subjects fatisfied, and the workd contented; there being not wanting lawfull, fpeci $\lrcorner$ ous, apparent, and hidden titles and pretences. Intelligences do worke better a farre off by their power, then neere by their perfon; thoughts which men have cannot be feen; but the eyes doe fhew where a man meanes to hit. That Prince Thomas in Flawders did thrive and gaine as prefent, in Italic as abfent, changing of countrie he mightbreed turmoile on the one part and doe hurt in the other, if not 'in both. Oftentation to be the greatert enemy that this enterprife could have, enough

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. I5

nough will be done, if they can perfwade that little can be done. The Dutcheffe will not defperately calt her felfe into the hands of the French, and they will not go with great powers, where they imagine not to gaine great rewards, or hinder great conquefts. Scarce fhall Prince Thomas appeare, but the one, and the other growen jealous and fufpicious, will ftirre up every ftone, and ufe the utrermoft endeavour, they will change all governours both in holds and armies, and fill every thing with French; whereby the one fide affured of the treacherie, and the other not forbearing to attempt it, cunning being in vaine employed, the time will be lolt of helping ones felfe with force. Nature hath thought craft to be hurtfull to valour, and onely helpfull to cowardlineffe, granting it to the weakeft kind of bealts, and denying it to the molt valorous. They are both hindered when they are together, diminiThing when they are mixed, and being good for nothing when they are diminifhed. That it was not knowne of what degree Prince Thomas his perfon Thould be in the army; it was not convenient he

## I6 The chiefe Events

Thould be fuperiour to the Marquis of Leganes, and to have him inferiour would be difionant. Howfoever he would breed difturbance, in Warre, in Peace, in overcomming, and (peradventure more) when he had overcome.
But wife men, and thofe who underftood his Majefties mind aright, difcourfed the contrarie. That it had alwayes bin helpfull to the conquering of countties, to have in the armies perfons of their blood who ruled. This meanes which had ferved many to cover injuftice and to deceive people, would now ferve to thew the truth, and to undeceive thofe which went aftray. That not:ing could hinder his. Majefties good intention more, then the not being knowne, and that nothing could make it more knowne then the prefence of thofe who were interefted. Should he feare the Dutcheffe fhould defpaire? let her do iwhat the wil, when the hath done what the could doe the will peradvencure not be more defperate (and that queftionleffe) when the is affaulted. Her mind cannot be gained, it mult be forced, fhe will give unto the French, whatfoever the Spaniards doe
in the Spanifh Monarchy. I7
not take. That the King ought to procure that thee might be wonne to her felfe, taking away her eftate, that the may not lofe it, with an intent (as a guardian ) to reftore it to her again when her Frenzie is over-palt, and that thee hath recovered her health. In the mean time that it is neceffarie to hinter her from calting it inso the hands of the French, and binde thefe to leave that by force, which they had through covetoufneffe ufurped, or to reftore it through envie. The prefence of thofe Princes to bee neceffary, they had nor yet gathered fo many intelligences, as they would gather. Let Potentares and ftrange Commonwealths Armies once heare them. and they will know that the King of Spaine goeth to proteit, and not to gaine. Let the Subjerts fee their faces, and they will believe they come to govern them, and not to fig'it with them. All will follow them, partly confeffing themfelves oblieged for reccived favcurs, and partiy howing themfelves freed from the oath which was given them, honour and conveniencie not hindering them, and feare and intereft pricking them cn. That thofe

## 18 <br> The chiefe Events

people hate the French, and diltrult the Spaniards, and fo being unrefolved between diftrult and hatred, they Thall fcarce fee the Princes, but without exact examination of the bufineffe, they will without any further confideration calt themfelves into their armes. He who is in a ftreight betweene two contraries, feares hurt from each, and as foone as he feeth a third, without further advife, he runnes precipitoufly to him. The hatred will be encreafed towards a womans government, and contempt of a childes. Diftafters will be imputed, fome to the ignorance, and fome to the evill will of them that rule. They will defire to change their Lord, and at laft they will change him.

They confeffed that intelligences which are had in States, promife more then they can doe, counting of that which others fhall doe, and that others are deceived in the doing, making accompt of that which hath been promifed them. Hee that means to undertake an enterprife and fets intelligences foremoft in an accompt, (hall find himfelfe deceived. There ought to follow hopes, not to
frame

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 19

frame them, doing fervice enough, when other things are difpofed, as if they ferved for norhing. Great forces confirme thofe who are well affeeted, and gaine thofe who ftand doubtfull; Small forces lofe every one, even thofe ivhofe underftandings were before perfivaded; That his Majeltie did confide in the greatneffe of Armies, as in a fubftance,' in that of intelligences, as in an accident. Who comes into a State with thefe two, runnes like a torrent, and the further hee goeth, the more he increafeth. That Prince Tbomas his valour, and experience in his owne Countrie (if no other circumflances did concurre ) promifed victories. That the Marqueffe of Leganes gentleneffe of mind, (who without lofing the Supream power, could yeild the fupreame honour) would fecure all difturbances in the progrefle; And the good intention of the King and Princes, after they had gone forward. The King not weighing whether it were profitable or hurtfull that Prince Thomas Thould goe into Italie, onely willing to fatisfie the defire he fee med to have of it, granted him leave: and he came thither juft at that time that
the Marquifle of Legames incited by many Letters of Count Duke, refolved to take the field.

Hee knew that to overcome the Frenches valour, it would be very advantagious to conquer their nature. Hee already for two yeares time had happily found by experience, what a great helpe celeritie was in Matiall affaires: and that greater fwiftneffe was able to counterpoife greater force. The nature of the heavens theweth it, wherein the weakelt are made the fwifreft, becaufe the inferiour fhall not be hindered by the mightier. The Moone whofe influence hath not vertue to equall Saturnes, Theweth her effects more clecte, and if the doth not produce them greater, hee reiterateth them more often, fupplying the weakneffe of her beane, with the fiviftneffe of her motion. The French is brought into ftreights by being prevenred: either he believes not himfelfe to be come time enough to opperate, and fo gives himfelfe over, or he moves out of time and fo lofeth himfelfe. The Spaniardis not fo: his nature is flow, and when that flowneffe imprints a quality which

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. $2 I$

which feeres to be hurtfull, not failing in what is neceffary, he brings into confequence the others which follow it, in fuch manner equalled with the firft, that they make it profitable, or at lealt they doe correftit. Who fo is overcome in his peculiar quality, ruines with the confeguent ; Nor by reafon of the firtt which he hath loft, but of the reft which he hath not changed.

The Marqueffe of Leganes fent $D$. Martino d'Arragon, with a part of the Army to the paffes; And hee with the reft came to Novara; Thither came Prince Thomas, they difcourfed of the furprifall of Civafco, and it was refolved in Vercelli to attempt it. The Prince with two thou!and Horfe did attempt it ; and having had good fucceffe, hee being ftrengthened with two thoufand foor which the Marqueffe fent him, fet upon 7 mrea, affaulted it, got within the Walls and wonne it, Veglia yeilded to him, and becomming Lord of both their Territories, hee became Mafter of the vale of Ofta.

Don Martino of Aragon thinking that to gaine Cexsio, it was trilt neceffary for
him to take Saliceto a fmall Caftle, fent D. Lewes of Lineaftre, thither, he raifed a Battery againlt it with two DemiCannon. D. Martiro went to view the place, and a Musket- olot hitting him in the forehead, flew him. A Souldier of extraordinarie valour, who had with his hand juftified what he was; He was loving to his inferiours, affable to his egualls, and reverent to his betters. Great in place, experience, hope and merit. Worthy to live to performe greater matrers, or to die upon a greater fervice. But there was nothing to be found fault with in him, if fo unhappy a death had not given caufe to accufe fortune.

The loffe of $\mathcal{D}$. Martino, might have occafioned fome competition amonglt the chiefe Officers, which ufeth to end in tumults, But D. Lewis Powze of Leon giving no time to difcourfes, came to remedie it with his perf,iafions, and chiefly by his example; For calling them altogether, he fhewed them, that he was one of his Majelties Councell of warre, the eldeft field Marfhall, and of the tertia of Lombardic; hee faid that by reafon of thele qualities, and of fome circum-

## in the Spanifb Monarcby. 23

ftances, by right the government belonged to him, which he did voluntarily lay downe, facrificing his owne intereft to the good of the King his Mafter, who when he receives dammage by a competition, every he who is in the right doth deferve punifhment : there being no privare re!pert that can parallel a publike dammage. That advices came of the enemies approaching; That the command might bee better deferved by fighting then by competition. If they did nor agree, there would be no fighting no co:nmanding, and all would be loft. That the Governour of CMilan Melved, which way he inclined when he fent $D$. Antoxio Sotells to feize on the workes; The nor yeilding to this would be a thwarting of the Marqueffe his defires, and to hinder rather then to accept of the command, which if it were laid downe, ought rather to be refufed with wifedome, then be af terwards forcibly left with thame.

They all approved of this difcourfe content to be commanded by D. Antonio Sotello. The King in his Letter acknowledged himfelfe to be well ferved by $D$. Lewishis difereet proceeding, not only B 4
for the prefent act (which occafioned a Viftory, and the like being not obferved in times palt had occafioned great loffes) but chiefly in refpect of the document which fo rare an example would leave unto pofteritie: and admitted of no exception, becaufe that befides the having right on his fide, hee wantel not great valour, and the like experience, belides the Nobility of his famous houfe.

This aition fo new, and fo unufuall in the Kings Armies deceived the Cardinall of Vallette, and the Marqueffe of Vil $l a$, who went with all their forces to relieve Saliceto, thinking to find the Souldiers without a Commandir, or with many confuled ones. They tound them commanded by D.Antonio Sotello, with fo much union, order, and valour, that comming to battell, they were routed and put to flight, with the death and imprifonment of the boldeft. A great part of the Vi.tory, ought to bee acknowledged from D. Lewes Ponze di Leon and his Regiment, who after he had modertly yeilded to his friends, fught valiantly againt his enemies, fheiving himfelfmore fit to govern then ambitious of governing.

So was that Itrong place wonn, which would have troubled any other Army that had not been Spanih, for the fpace of a whole yeare, and was a place of great importance, one part of it ftanding upon' the entrance of Piemons, and:the other to fecure Fimall.

This piece of Army was returning to joyne with the Marqueffe under the conduct of Dos $\begin{aligned} & \text { obs di Garrai, and comming }\end{aligned}$ neere to Verrsa in an evening, he tcoke the out-workes; At the dawning of the day he affaulted it five wayes ; wonne ir, Set upon the Ca (tle, and it yeilded to him.

Hee was revenged of the wounds which he had received in that place when he ferved the Duke of Ferin, and if hee did in fome way difgrace his Mafters ast raking that in foure houres, which his Mafter could not take in three moneths; yet did hee doe much credit to his advice, the Dukes Counfell being then to affault it, not to befiege it ; Then hee joyned with the Marqueffe of Leganes; who laid Siege to Crefcentino, and though it. had a dike full of water, deepe; and well fertified, and kept
by a Garrifon of thirteene hundred French, yet in eight dayes he wonne it. It will not peradventure be diftaftefull if I here fet downe what reafon moved the King of Spaine at firtt to invade the Duke of Savoy his Dominions, for the Ating of revenge, reafon of Stare, nor rigor of juftice are not fufficient motives for his mild piety, co bring him on to endammage other men, if he were not $0^{-}$ therwife violently moved thereunto.

Marqueffe Forxi Amadeo, Duke of $S_{a}$ voy his Ambaffadour was in Madrid, who in the name of the Duke his Mafter, promifed all friend/hip, and forbearance of hoftity, when the Duke at the felfefame inttant joyning with France, entred into the State of Milan ; when (for feare of breeding jealoufie) it lay in a manner difarmed : with an Ecclefiafticall perfon over the Politick government, and an old man over the Militarie; So that from one skirmilh to another, it came to that pane, that if they would not yeeld without any more Itirring, they mult bee forced to adventure it upon a battell at Tornevento, with fo much difadvantage, that nothing ( neceffity cxcepted) cou.d have
have freed it from the judgement of a molt rah act.

Being as it were by miracle efcaped out of there ftreights, Duke Amadeo died. And what rational man then would have faid, that it was not then jult for the King of Spaine to overthrow his Dominions, who had deceived him with publick faith ? and joyning with his enemies, had affaulted the State of Milan, and brought it in jeopardy of lofing. What Politician would nor have judged it neceffarie, not to leave an example fo pernicicus to all Monarchies, viz, that they might bee fet upon by inferiour Princes, and thofe Princes receive no other dammage therby, but the not obtaining of the iffue of their defires? And what humane heart of flefh would have blamed the King for running upon a revenge neceffarie in Policie, and lawfull in Juftice; Yet his Majelty courteous, not vindicative : magnanimous, not Politick, pious with Jultice, and not jult with rioour, propounded Peace to the Dutcheffe if fhe would forbeare to alfit the French, taking upon him to make an agreerrent beiveen her and the Princes her Allies; what
could he doe more to have this Vine produce Grapes? yet it brought forth nothing but wilde ones. What could he do lefle, then come in with fire and Sword, to fhew what gentleneffe provoked with ingratitude, and mercy neighted by obAtinacie can, and is able to doe? Yer hee hath not done it ; he burned onely to fatten the foile, and deftroy the weeds; He cut downe to enoraft Plants, to caufe them bring forth fruits in Itead of thorns; He overcame the Mother, that fhe might not ruine her Sonne; He moved.war to eftablifh peace and:feized on dominions to reftore them.

The French were already come into low Germany, with two mighty Armies, the one under the command of Migliari, to goe upon the Counery of Artois, the other led by Fuccbieres to enter upon the land of $L$ mrenburgo The defignes were to renew the name \& recover the Kingdom of the ancient Ansfrafia. Surely a great thought, and befitting a high mind that were not moft Chriftian. The provocatives were the remembrarce of Charles the great, and the greatneffe of the houle of $A \mathrm{wffr}$ a, the end corenew the firft, and ruine the laft.

The

# in the Spanifb Monarchy. 29 

The firft things wherein Princes are in their younger yeares inftructed, are great acts of their. Predeceffors; They hear them rehearfed with delight, whileft they are not able to att them (infirmity of humane nature, which not to remaine without glory, having none of their own, appropriate other mens to themfelves, and takes from the fortune of Birth, that which fprings onely from the worth of the perfon.) But if their fpirit growes up with their age, thofe relations which otice feemed to pleafe, do now torment, to praife, reprove, and tormenting and reproving enflameth them, firft to be imitators of their Aunceftors, and to follow their fteps; then to emulate and outgoe them, which ever tiech them either to live idle in defpaire, or troublefome to difquiet the world : And if by chance to the memory of thofe who are palt, be ad ${ }^{+}$ ded an errulation of fome that are prefent, finding greater in their owne and other fami:ies by reading and practife experience. And if equalling the firft confilts in overcomming the laft, What provocations will thele bee to fight with them? Surely very fharpe ones.

## $3^{\circ}$ <br> The chiefe Events

And what thall be the ends of fighting with them, certainly peace and quietneffe, not of the world, but their owne, for not being able to attaine unto thofe ends, but by overcomming the world, they fer that at variance, and conquer it not, but difquier, and ruine it.

Happy is the King of Spaine (and by his meanes the Chriftian world) who hath no emulators, who being greater then he, doe difquiet him, and hath no memories of any Anceltors, but fuch as tie him rather to keep what he hath, then to gaine more. His quiet is not moved, but he appeafeth motions, he fhuns war, and loves peace : never takes up Armes, but to caufe them to be laid down.

The Cardinall Infanta gave order to Piccolomini to goe fet upon Fucshieres, and bid him battell. Thie Marqueffe of Fuenes to oppofe Migliare his proceedings, who after the burning of certaine Caltles and Toivnes, had laid fiege to Edino. And the Count of Fera was to watch the Hollander, who was drawing neere to the Ifland of Bommell. Things feemed here to be well ordered, but a fudden accidenthad like to have diftur-

## is the Spanifh Monarchy. $3^{I}$

bed them. Banier had routed, fix thoufand of th'Imperiall Foor, the Emperour defired fo many men of Piccolomini to fupply that want. It was judged in Flandars, that to fend thofe men, would but little helpe the Empire, and occafion the totall ruine of that Province.

That the French was to be more looked after then the Swede. That Banier would not effect that which the King of Sweden could not doe, the King of France might doe it. Nothing is more eafie then to know his intent, and there is no Prince or Common-wealth in Germsanie, but if he knew it, wculd take up armes to hinder it. All of them might hinder it, if they would determine $f 0$, and they would all know it, if they would reflect uponit.

The firft thing the King of Frasce defires, is to make himfelfe Emperour, and it will bee the laft hee will attaine to; His Anceftors began with the taking of Metz, Tul, and Verdus, he hath followed thefe with the taking in of Alfacia and Zorraine. Being Lord of Teonville, hee will now take Luxemburge, Burgundie will totally fall, the Palatinate will not

## $3^{2}$ <br> The chiefe Events

bee able to defend it lelfe, hee will become Malter of the Land of Trever, and all the old Aaffrafia, hee will fubdue th'Ecclefiatticall Ele'tors, the Kings of Spaine will lofe Flanders, Cafar the Empire, and the Common-wealths of Germanie their Liberties, and the Princes their States.

The Father of this Emperour found himfelfe in th'extreameft ftreights having nothing lefthim but Viensa (and thatbefieged ) whileft he was not as yet Emperour. The King of Spaine relieved him with reputation, Armies and Treafures, which he could not have done, had he not been Lord of Flawders; Hee became victorious,fubdued his enemies,recovered his Dominions, made himfelfe Emperor,s his Son King of the Romans.

It is a great Error for a little evill not to fhut the doore againft greater ones, which will fuddenly happen, and then bee remedileffe; and a great loffe of reputation, for a fmall lofle, to forfake the inrerelts of Germanie, Italy, Weftphalia and Flanders.

The emperour and the King of Spaine their Dominionsare feparate, to enjoy

## in the Sparifb Monarchy. 33

every one his owne, in time of peace, but they are not divided upon occafiori of defence in time of Warre; Where dangers are common, it is not good to make the interefts particular. A man ought not to take more care of his owne ttate then of anothers, if his greatelt interelt lieth in the cthers.

If the care require it th'Intanta would goe in perion to defend him ; And would leave (as hath beene done at other times ) the King his Marters Dominions to affift him, but th'occafion doth not now require it.

If Piccolomint his Forces thould goe away (which in a manner bridle the bounds of Weftphalia and the Rhine) the Princes who are. friend;, and it they faulter not, doe at lealt feare) lofing courage, would accept the enemies proffers, which they would not doe, let the pretences bee never fo feccious, if they were not put to defpaire.

It would be fourtie dayes before thefe Forces could come to the place where there was need of them; in the meane time there might either bee no need of them,

## 34 <br> The chiefe Events

them, or greater would bee required, which might then bee fent him, feven thoufand Foot being daily looked for out of Spaine, there being neiv levies in the Countrie, and daily hopes of routing the enemy.

The Forces might be defeated by the way, and the Fresch mig'te fet upon Piccolowinie being weakened, and overcome him, or with a few Horfe fet upon this reliefe, and rout it, fo that it would arrive too late and defeated or being overthrowne, would not come thither at all.

There reafons fhewne by the Cardinall to Piccolomini, perfivaded him to ftay till further order, and being likewife reprefented to the Emperour, he was contented to defift and preffe it no further.

The King of France his Fleet confilting of forty great men of warre, and more terrible by reafon of thirty fixe Thipps, which railed along with it, fet raile being commanded by th'ArchbiOnop of Bourdeanx, who thus encompaffed with fire and Sword (as Taffo defcribes Lucifer withltanding heaven )carried Vulcas in Neptunes lappe, to fire rather then fight.

## in the Spanifh Moxarchy. 35

Hee camewithin fight of the Groine. There commanded on the fhore, the Margueffe of Valpraifo, who endowed with Spanifh valour had alfo rome French fantafticalneffe in him ; The fhipping was under the command of $D_{0 x} L_{0-}$ $z e d s$ Ozes, a valiant Souldier, and molt expert Mariner ${ }_{2}$ moft happy in all his enterprifes whenfoever he ftruggled with the Sea, or fought with his enemie, if fo be the fire was not his enemie, or the Sea became not a Hell. Th'Archbifhop endeavoured to draw neere the Haven, hee was pur back with loffe. He tried to burn the fhipping, \& he was oppored by floating timber which fhut of the entrance of the Haven.

Thefe things paffed by Sea, and by Land were greater dangers threatned by the preparation of Armes, and provifion which was made at Narbona : the report went the Prince of Conde was to invade the Councie of Raciglione with a powerfall Army.

This Monarchy was ordained to have warres, either for him, or by him; And hee alwayes to retire, either into Spaine, being perfecuted by the French, or into

Prance, being purfued by the Spaniard, by a retreat receiving curtefies, and with another repaying them.

Wife men imagined, the Enemies inrent to be rather to amaze with reports, then to fet upon with Armes, to threaten rather then affauit, to divert rather then conquer. The diverfion poffible to bee obtained by fetting up three or foure Cofours at home, without difplaying them in the field, Litting men, without tirring them. Conquelts to be almoft impoffible, difgraces eafie, and the dammages certaine. No account to be made of Salfas, and though it Thould chance to bee loft. Perpignane not to be feared though it fhould be affaulted, being ftrong of it felfe, back'd by a Province abundant in provifion, rich in coine, and numerous in hardie and valiant men. That the King of Spaize would bee the hardlier turned, by reafon he was tied to defend himfelfe being affaulted by great Forces, and had Arength enough to doe it, and becaufe of th'effect which the love of their King, and the hatred they have to the French, mighe worke in the hearts of the Catalonians. That his Majeltie had with the

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 37

Havens, the Dominion of the Sea, his Gallies might hinder any one elfe from becomming malter ofit. This gate being clored, it would be impolfible for the French to maintaine a potent Army, feeing hee was to bring Ammunition and provifionon his backe, fo farre for it. The fire to bee kindled in Italie. Piemont in eminent danger to bee loft, and the Kings Sifter wath it. That it was good to draw the Spaniards thither, where the reward was great, and whither they could not come but by Sea, where the Climate is different, and where once routed, it was hard for them to bee recruited. That Nature had parted there two Nations with th'Appenines; the Spaniards Foote to bee more valiant, and the French more numerous in Cavallerie; The one to bee forced to come into the Mountaines to move warre, where they can make no ure of that wherein they molt abound, and the others to defcend into the plaine, where that was needfull, which they mof wanted. To fo many motives of reafon, and naturall cares, was added the ancient experience, and efpecial-

## 38 The chiefe Events

efpecially the moderne of Fonterable, where the laft yeare they loft fo many men, and fo much reputation.

But now in thefe dayes experience is followed, onely wherein it is tavourable; if adverfe, it mult bee overcome, and though its aathority be not denied, yet it mut be interpreted; The caufe is attributed to chances, which alwaies accompany every great enterprize, and the croffe of chances imputed to the Commanders, changing of which in ftead of taking away th'inconveniences, they alter the Generalls, in fead of amending the evill, they multiplied and increale it.

One runneth not twice into an error, when in the fame there is both fhame and loffe, for the danger of loffe will not fuffer them to adventure the fhame. Enterprifes obtaine not their effeits, either becaufe they are projected, or badly executed, the error is fometimes in the one, fometimes in the other : but the fault is alvayes laid on him who can leaft helpe it.

It is common to all men to erre, but proper onely to brave men to confeffe
their error; He that hath often dealt infallibly, if he receive blame for being once deceived, receives no Thame by confeffing that he was deceived, It is no abafement of fpirit, nor lofle of reputation; It is a confidence in ones owne credit, which is not feared to be lolt in one onely action. Hee that confeffeth an error, bindeth himfelfe to the cancelling of it by fome great attempt; whereas he that denieth it, leemes to be fubject to commit a greater. And it is ftrange that an ignorant man will never confeffe one, when the wife man affirmes, that the juft man commits feven in a day.
The French Army (numerous being of. twenty thoufand Fcot, commanded in chiefe by the Prince of Cosde, a Lord of a great bloud, and fecondarily by the Duke of Luin, a Souldier of great valour) was by the moft Chriftian Kings Officers fent into the Countie of Ronciglione, as though they would overcome the bounds of nature, the valour of the Spaniards, and alter the Generalls fortune; Fortune fmiled, but did not favour ; Valour overcome by multitude, appealed to time: Na ture was betrayed, and not over come.

The

## The cbiefe Everats

The Governour of the Caftle of Oppoli, a fmall place, a paffage of chofe Mountaines of a craggie fituation, inacceffi. ble by Ordinance, and almolt impenetrable to man, tuffered himtelfe ro be furprifed by a Fanatick terror. The cries of the French threats entred into his eares, the number of the men prefented it felte before his eyes, and in ftead of viewing them withemiffive rayes, which he might have done a farfe off from the foor of the hill, he received th'impreffion of them in th'eyes of his imagination, he figured them to himfelfe, as if they were before him, and was difturbed, and before hee could come to himfelfe againe, he lolt his courage, his difcourfe and himfelfe: for yeilding up the Caltle to the French, hee and his I-ieutenant were put to death at Perpignane, punifhing him, and by his punifhment giving others example.
The Count of Santa Colomba governed the Province of Catalonia in thofe dayes to the King and peoples great fatisfaction, a Gentleman of great hopes, though but of finall experience. The defect of this quality fuffered him not then to bee an eminent Souldier, the plenty of other

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 41

promiled he would be one. Hee was noble, apt, prudent, calme, and valiant. In a peaceable government, you could have defired no more : And in warre hee fo behaved himfelfe, that it feemed that did him no hurt, which he was defertive in; For providing difcourfing, and doing every thing exceeding well, none cculd judge he needed that which hee onely wanted.

Hee did not find himfelfe to have Arength enough to refift the enemie in the field; Themen he looked for to recruit that Armie were not yet come; greater conveniencie, therefore was to be exppeited, it being reafonable to doubt in things not to be queftioned at that time.

The Margueffe of Legakes bufineffe would not permit to have fix thoufand Foot taken from the Army which were allotted for that place, feeing he had loft many men in the Conqueft, and employed many to fecure the conquered places. The Gallies of $N$ aples and Sicily, thinking their orders for comming into Spane had a connexion with thofefix thouland Foors comming, fayed for new orders.

## $4^{2}$ <br> The chiefe Events

whereby they retarded the arrivall of the Tertia of Modons of the Levies made within the Territories of LMeGn, and of the old Gally fouldiers. The Catalaines, either becaufe they did not imagine the enemy would at that time fet upon thofe parts, or becaufe they were too much tied to the Letter(conftruing their priviledges too Atraitly and rigoroufly) had not made any fitting preparation. To all thefe accidents there concurred at laft ( to the great wrong of wifdome, which oppofed is the ruine of wife men) fome French Officers had intercepted certaine Letters fent by the Marqueffe of Leganes, importing that the Prince of Conde with his Forces in Linguadoc was to march towards Italy. It was eafily believed, for if it was not, it ought to have been fo; and though it did not perfwade to defilt from being carefutl, yet it diffivaded from ufing compulfion.

Spaine was encompaffed with enemies, a mighty Fleet at the Groise, a great Army in the County of Rowciglione, threatned in the Mediterranean by the Ships and Gallies of Marfeilles, in Cantabria by the Forces which were gathering to-
in the Spanifh Monarchy.
gether in Bayona, and yet the people (a thing worthy of note) which lalt yeare were affrighted with one Siege, in a place of no great danger, were no more moved at the rumour of fo many forces, then if there were none. Whether it were becaufe the French, who have no power to overcome, but at the firlt fhock, could affright them but at the firft ; Or that the people being affaulted, where they thought they could not bee endammaged, believed their owne judgement to be deceived, and not the enemies. And not finding what reafonmoved him, becaufe they could not find it, they judged it to be great, and finding it once vaine and weake, giving over unreafonable feare, they fell into a foolifh fecureneffe.

Novelty deceives the judgement, either becaufe it goeth before the difcourfe, or becaule it difturbeth it. In a moment it ftrikes to the underffanding, and forceth it prefently to frame a confured and indiftinet conception : and with deceit increafeth thofe paffions, which ignorance would abate. Every thing in the world is vaine, when it is once knowne. There is no delight can pleafe the mind.

## The chiefe Events

nor feare can terrifie it ; Habir diminifheth our palfions, not through any power it hath from cuftome, but through the want we have of the true objects; Novelty increafeth them, not becaufe it is unutuall, but becaufe it is unknowne.

But whether the Spaniards or the French-mens nature caufed thele various motions ; Sometimes ignorance, fometimes undeceiving, fometimes the novelty, fometimes the habit, Certaine it is that above all other things, that wrought in it (which the eyes of all Spaine faw the yeare before ) the Kings great wifedome, wife phantafie, and fure direction; The certaine judgement, eminent underftanding, quick execution, and unceffant labour of the Count Dake, whence arofe the confidence which encreafeth the courage, and perfwades obedience; which if it be not deceived in the object, affilts the Victories, and being deceived, it hoperh for them. And if it be not fufficient to make one overcome, it fufficeth at lealt to make him fearleffe.

The Marqueffe of Filla Franca, went to command the Spanih Gallies which were in Barcellowa, Gianattino d'Oria

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 45

arived thither with them of Genoa, Frigets were fent to halten away them of Sicily and Naples. It was ordered that the remnant of the Count Dukes regiment fhould march, and with it fix thoufand of the choicelt foot in Cantabria. That Perpignane fhould be fully ammunitioned, and that the forces fhould lie umder fhelter of it; That the Marqueffe of Torracufa and Arena fhould goe thither ; That onely five handred horfe Bould ftay for the defence of Cantabria, and the relt fiould march to Perpignane; Thai money, munition and vistuals fhould be provided. That the Levies in Arragons and Valencia fhould bee haltened; that thele fhould be perfwaded to defend their Countrey, and all Thould remember the bond wherein they were tied to their Liege Lord.

The King of France his Fleet lay at the Groine, and vexed the coalt of Spaine. The Hollanders lay in the Channell, and hindered the fending of men appointed for Flanders; And becaule it was neceffarie to defend the one, and relieve the other, the Count Duke called the Finnta oi the Councells of State and Warre, without C 3 which

## 46 . The rbiefe Events

which he hath done nothing, and in which hee hath done every thing. If he fpake firtt, the voting ended in him ; Hee left way for nothing but for applaufe; If laft from him it tooke beginning, mending errors, or by him it gor perfection, bettering what was defective.

To defire to be the onely advifer of a King, makes not an Officer great, it makes him odious, and expofeth him to danger, and ofrentimes is a figne of a rah mind, which arrogates too much toit felfe; fometimes of a fufpicious and miftruffull beart, and many times alfo of a weake brealt, which thunnech the reft, fearing to divide the Kings favour, and lofe it, if he prove inferiour.

There was fcarce ever any 'great Officer, but that defired to doe every thing himfelfe, and doing ir, hath not been ruined. But if the wifett men could not ket $p$ themfelves from $t^{h}$ is icching defire furely there mult be iome great conveniencie in ir; And if fo many have beene wracked thereby, there muft lie hidden in it fome great danger. Two great gualities which the Count $\boldsymbol{D}$ wke hath, make thefe fo intricate points even, namely his moderation

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 47

moderation and valour, doing every thing by the advice of counfell, and in counfell prevailing above all; whereby he enjoyeth the conveniencie, of avoyding hatred, and converting it into admiration.

I defire not to bee alone believed in what I fay of this great Officer. Let the Originall confultations of both the great Councells of ftate and warre rogether be looked upon, and you thall find (which is a thing worthy of wonder) that the vote comming lalt to the Count Duke, upon fome particular confiderations of his, many Confultations have binaltered, all confeffing that they has erred.

The meanes was canvaffed in the $f^{3} x-$ $t a$ how to remedy the prefent inconveniences; It was voted by all that the Coalt Thould be defended by land, and that the reliefe fhould be conveyed into Flanders, (if the French Army did not hinder it) by fayling about Scotland, with 2 long compaffe, expofe ito many misfortunes, and by a parcell of Sea, naturally threatning hipwracks.

But the Count Duke, in whofe underftanding lyeth joyned the whole trame
of the Monarchie, whofe brealt is capable of tuo worlds, confidering what ver. fells were in Caxtabria in foure townes, namely, in the Groine, Lisbon, Cadiz, Alicant; and Cartagena, fome Merchants Veffells which were come out of the Indies, tog ether with thofe as were every day expected with the Fleet, made it appeare that his Majefty had a Fleet fufficient to fight with the French, carry reliefe into Flanders, and alfo to paffe iuto the Mediterranean Seas, and for a need, fight with the Turke, and relieve the Venetians.

His Majelty and the whole Iunta agreed with the Count Duke his opinion, who fent Orders, and provided for neceffaries, that thefeFleets might as foon as polfibly they could. be ready to fet faile.

From hence let it hee gathered, how great the forces of the Sparifh Monarchy are, and which mot to bee regarded. When thefe did not fo much as come in fight nor thought worthy confideration, though they were greater then fome, as other great Potentates would make their lalt refuge and ground their highelt thoughts, and livelieft hopes upon.

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 491

Piccolomixi was marching towards Luxerisburg, to fight with Fucchieres, but could not reach him fo foon, but that hee was firlt entrenched and befieging of $T_{e}-$ omvill. He fet upon him, difordered two of his quarters, made him breake up, relieved the place, paffed over the Mole : fought with him fquadron after fquadron, wherefir a time th'enemy fought valiantly, then gave way, and at the laft fled.

The French have fwift and fubcile fpirits, eafie to be moved, and being moved, eafie to be diffolved, and becaule fiwift and moveable, they run prefently where they find occafion, and united in the felfefame time and place, they make the fubject at the firlt greater then man ard becaufe they are tender and fubtile, and apt to conlume in the end being weakned, deftroyed, and diffolved, they forfake him, and leave him a dead carkaffe. Such like effects are feene every day ior a candie before it goeth out; and in a. fick man before he diecth. The candle becaufe it Mall not ruine at the firtt, by framing a great light, is hindered by the tenacityors groffieffe of the matter, which at she lat-i

## 50 The chisfo Events

ter end being fofrened \& rarified moveable, and light, runs without delay to toment the flame, and increale it; it doth it; but for a little time, becaufe there is but little matter left. In a fick man the fpirits being fubrilized by diet, not overburthened, nor hindered by the body already brought low. confumed \&i walted; finding themfelves at liberty and. loof, fiercely fer upon the difeal; \& being more aitive then ever they were, at firit they overcome, but-being tender; they confume in overcomming, \& being confumed, net finding where to refrefh themfelves, having none to fecond them, if they overcome not in aninftant, they die. The flaughter was great, becaufe the foot were all flaine or taken. The vistory was the more famous by the chiefe Commanders being taken. This Noble man a Politician, and a fouldier, of greater experience in States-bufineffe then in warres, was adviled more by politick, then Military art, did rather follow the time, then manage his forcer; and lott, feeking to prevent loffe. Hee knew by th'example of former Captains, that there was no meane; that hee mu't either conguer, or lofehimfelfe, amonglt

$$
\text { in the Spanifh Monaraby. } 51
$$

his triends with thame, cr amongit his enemies with glory. For in France, where the unwillingneffe of lofing, was not admitted for a iufficient reafon of not having overcome, there remained no proofe of a mans not being able to overcome, but onely by lofing.

Piccolomini itayed not to enjoy the vistory, he thought to increafe it by trying Mouzzone, and it hee had attempted it prefently, he had furely taken ic, but want of provifions hindered him.

Man propofeth an end unto himfelfe, and for that end he prepareth his means; if upon a new occafion he change his end, if he provide not new meanes, he loferh timfelfe, and while he doth provide them, he lofeth his opportunitie. He that goeth about one enterprife, ordinarily cannot performe two, and hee that will undertake two, feldome performeth any. Some have not followed vistories, becaule they could not, and fo have loft their credit; and fome, when they ought not, having grne on to follow them have quite loft them. When ore partie is in poffibility of being overcome, the other is not alwaies fitting to fer uponhim.

The ftaying of his Majefties Officers, gave the Marfhall of Caffillos time to come and relieve it, caufing the forces which Piccolomini had fent thither to retreate, whilft hee marched on fpeedily with the Cavalrie (fent for by the Cardinall Infanta) to relieve Edino, brought to the lalt garpe.

The Cardinall of Richolicion the moft Chriftian Kings great Ufficer, had brought his Lord to the Frontiers of Artois, very neere to Edine, were it a purpofe to give the King the honour of it as faab did, or upon neceffitie to encourage the Army, that it might not disband. Confidence of overcomming, or provilion to overcome, had fo much the more ingaged him, becaufe that having counterpoifed the loffe with she gaine, the following of the enterprife, with the deferting of it; he found it was more reproachfull to reirear halfe tlying, then glorious to enter into a fmall place when it was wonne. Joabs fucceffe then had fome conveniencie in ir, now adayes ic is become a meere curiofitie. TDavid was a great Commander, it might be thought of him, that by his braine he had taken

## in the Spanißh Monarchy. 53

the place, though he was farre off, whereas it would not be thought fo of other men, though they were neere. But if this were imprudencie, (which I will not affirme) over carelefneffe uransformed it into wifedome. For the Garrifon wanting powder, being well affaulted, better defended, wanting Ammunition, it was loft, not being not able to fubfilt eight dayes, which had been enough to have made this yeare, the giorioufet yeare that the Monarchy of Spaize had ever feene. The Cardinall Infanta could not relieve it for want of Horfe, the Governour for want of Powder, and Picsolomswi for want of time.

He came to the Army, and was there seceived with applaufe; Hee was born of, Aunceftors famous both in Peace and Warre ; renowned fometimes by the Keyes, and fometimes by the Sword; he ferved his naturall Lord at Court, in his childhood; Being yet but young, he went to the German warres, and in his firlt beginnings Thewed himfelfe worthy of the chiefe degrees; Hearrived thereursto by the leffer; for whereas they ufe to ftay for a time, that yeares may increale valour

## 54 <br> The chiefe Ervents :

valour, they were faine to ltay a rime, that his age might increafe, becaufe that which was proportionable to his merit, might not be difproportionable to his yeares; fo that leaving it to be queltioned whether fortune or valour were greater in him, I will onely affirme that he hath been long er va'orous then fortunate; Generous, magnanimous, fearleffe, hiberall, and ordained for vitories, hee made them fpring in the middelt of loffes, and conquered where he did not overcome. So fortunate, that valour feemed to fuperabound in him, and that hee had no need of it. So valorous, that it feemed fortune was fuperfluous to him, and that he even forced her. This enemy to merit, when the cannot beat it downe by abandoning it, will follow it, to make it feeme lefle : and weake,s glories, by dividing that which is not to be divided and reguiring thare in that wherein the hath not wrought. In his firft age he was valiant without any defe?t of wifedome, in his fecond wife without any diminution of valour. Happy in all occafions, viQorious at all times, fo that nothing hinders him from being compared with the

## ine the Sparifh. Monarchy. 55

greatef Commanders of our time, but this onely, that he was never overcome. His Majelties forces overrunne Piemont without any refiltance. Prince Tbomas proporiaded to the Margueffe of $L_{\text {eganes, }}$ to goe before Tiwrin with the Armie, noz to trie the frength of it by force, but onely to fhew himfelfe, aud encourage thofe friends which he had within it. But all were not of that mind. .

Some faid that there was no reafon to goe thither, bur onely upon hope of intelligences, which hope was eafily perceived, when there was no other, and once perceived, was eafily croffed. That the Citizen was nothing worth, where the Souldier was armed and forewarned. That darkneffe and fuddenneffe did favour turbulent defignes, light and time would dilfipate them. That what might bewould for that time be made impoffi-, ble, by fhewing ones felfe ; And the furprizall for ever, by making ones felfe knowne. That the coure of Fortune cught not to be ftayd, nor reputation endangered, time loft, and given to the enemy.

Notwithfanding all thefe reafons the Marqueffe

## The chiefe Events

Margueffe knowing that it was good to trie any thing which could nor bee hurtfull, and deating with careleffe men, that might prove eafie which feemed molt difficult ; and to avoid the cenfure of Criticks; which alwayes chinke well of that which hath not been tried, he did not oppofe Prince Thossas his defires, and difpofed the bufineffes in that kind, that hee would be fure to lo'e no reputation by beginning any rrench ; nor any time by Itaying there but few dayes, and not to give over his conquefts by fending Trotti to Ponteftura.

Being come within fight of Twris, the Enemy oppofed him with Horfe and Foor, our men roured them, flew many, and tooke fome prifoners, and fome few that fled they purfued to the very Purculliffes of the Citie. The Dutcheffe fent the Popes Nuntio, to negotiate an an greement between her and her Kinfnen; Her Propofitions now when the loft all were as high, as if the were a Conque. rour; Shee feemed to give, rather then take lawes. Hir demands were great and once granted could not be recalled; And all thee promifed, was as noting,

## in the Spakifh Morarchy. 57

an ithat revocable when the pleafed.
The Treaty broke off, th'intelligences failed, and the Marqueffe went away, and becaule $T$ rot $t i$ having taken the town of Ponteftura, found much refiftance in the Caltle, he refolved to divide his Army into two parts. Prince Thomsas with the one part went to Villanoza, and tooke it by ltorme ; with the orher, the Margueffe marched towards Ponteftura; Hee overthrew the enemies reliefe, tooke the Caft'e, went to CMoscalno, and having taken that place, he lay downe before $A$ firivith his whole Army. The Piemonteffes, cerrified by the Kings forces, brought the Keys of the Citie to the Princes, and the Spaniards valour overcame the obltinacie of them that kept the Fort.

The Marqueffe his defires aimed at the taking in of Trino, a place of it felfe being of importance, and befides it cut off reliefe from Cafal , and fafeguarded the State of Milax. Hee had fent his Cavalrie thither, (whileft bee lay betore Afi) to hinder th'enemie from fending in any forces. They tooke much Ammunition which would have gone in, and cut off almoft
aimoft a whole reliefe of five hundred chofen French, whom the Marqueffe of Thllanova fought to bring in there. Trino is held to be almolt impregnable, fortied without and within, a boyge neere it not to be medled ivith, deep water in the Motes, a ftrorg Garrifon, and well victualled. Notivithftanding the Marqueffe beffeged it, made a Trench, and witha!! his approaches as neere as hee thought fitting for raifing of Batteries, and refolved to give a generall affault, hoping thereby to gaine fome ui the outworks. He gave the affault, tooke all the outworks, the Citie, and the Caltle, which having no time to receive the Sonldiers that fled thither being unprovided, and amazed, yeilded within few hcures; It was impolfible to hinder the Army (vitorious and heated) from pillaging, flaying and burning.

Who thall deny valour to break forth? it groweth with the heat of vietory, and fnatching the reines out of judgements hands, ir guides a man, and more then that it carries him? Whereby being heated; he goeth where he thought not, and being in cold blood, he findeth himfelfe

## in the Spanifb Mowarchy. 59

where now he could not goe, becaufe hee went not, but was carried thither.

It would be needfull here to fet forth the Margueffeo: Leganes his glories, who hath filled Flanders, Germany, and Italy with his arts and vittories; mortified France, and made Spaine glorious. But what greater teftimony can I give him of it, but co make it knowne that a Letter of the Kings fake his deferts; A Monarchs Pen was requifite therein, that authoritie might caufe it co be believed; The whole world unanimouldy with. one hand fetting downe thofe glories, which conformity caufeth it to ipread abroad with one tongue.

The affaires in che Councy of Ronciglione went on with various fortune, the enemy had raken the Gaftle of Oppoli, and havirg put a Garrifon into it, had laid fiege to Salfas.

This place lieth almoft ina Semicircle at the foot of the Pirenean Mountaines ; high hills, fmall hillocks, and ftanding waters are the theatre of it. On the South it lookes towards Catalonia, on the North are the $\mathbf{A}$ pennines, the Sea is on the Ealt, and on the Welt a Poole which

## 60 Thechiefe Events

 which falls from the Pireneans, almoft to the Walls; The Country may be called barren, the aire fubtile, by reafon of the Mountaines which overtop it, and foggie, becaufe of the water which is fo neere it, which mixture rather hurts it then mends it. The Place if you confider the fituation is not very fulficient to defend the Country; if the Fortifications, not to defend it felfe ; The Motes are full of water, the Walls maffie, high, and countermined; by the forme it is altogether expored to the enemies injwrie, by the matrer partly defenlible. The hardneffe of the ftone will not fuffer any breach to be made in it, the fmallneffe of the Flanckers will nothinder the approaches. It was ftrong enough in thofe dayes, when the art ufed in affaulting tied men to no greater defence. The lalt who put it in a polture of defence, found it fo fcituate, that it was neceffary, either to fortifie or fleight it; He fortified it, becaufe it was, not becaule it fhould be there.The Governour valorous, but not of experience equall to it, refolved to lofe himfelfe before he would yeild the place, more faithfull then warie, thinking onely
upon the nor yeilding of it, failed in the neans of keeping it; He defended not the :counter $\{$ caff, he came not out of the walls, te fortified not himfelte in the Motes, he did not fufficiently meet the Mines, nor re did not difturb them in their Works. Every time the enemy came with force upon him, he beat him back, but he did not under him when he used art, wherby after ourty dares refiltance Salas was loft by zarelefnefs,st after fo many more of fiege it was won by furprife. For the enemy haring in vain attempted with fore Batecries to beat down the wall,comming to it with the mattock had very good fuccels by reafon of a Mine, which springing, made a hole in stead of a breach, by which (though little) there went in a great many French before the befieged efpied it, or at lealt had rime co hinder them. Wherefore running too it too late, and to no purpofe, rome of the valianteft died there. The Governour being lame of the Gout, was not prefent at the action, and yeeldedupon Compofition, with thofe fouldies which he had left. Many think they have performed their duties, if they doe not yeild up a Hold, as if yeilding them, or having them taken were not the fame thing:

## 62 The chiefo Events

thing. It is better for a Captaine to want valour, then experience, the Souldier fometimes helpeth the one, and addeth confufion to the other. There is nothing worfe then ignorance accompanied with valour, the heart goes againft th'underftanding, the one will doe, and the other knoweth not what to doe, fo that one doth, and knowes not what he doth.

Warre requires art and valour, and all enterprifes, doe not reguire there two qualities in an equall proportion, fometimes there is moft need of the one, fometimes of the other; but becaufe this diftinction is feldome made, and leffe knowne, though many times one overcome with one alone, it is judged he hath done it with both. So men deceived fometimes by thunderfanding, and moftcimes by the heart, doe give the command of all enterprifes to fuch as are not goodior all.

To few men hath nature given both great valour, and great underftanding, whether becaule they require a contrary temperature, which is impoffible to be given them, or an even counterpoife which cannot be joyned to them. Some-

## in the Spanith Monarchy. $\sigma_{3}$

times the grear heat of the heart, overheateth the braine, and fomerimes the coldneffe of the braine, does coole the heart too much. And though in Armies there be feen more valorous then underftanding men Commanders, it is not becaufe thefe be leffe neceffary, but becaufe they are not fo ealily found; It is hard in warres to become famous without valour, and men attaining to command if they be not famed; Vnderftanding attaines not to it for want of heart, and the heart becaufe it hath no underftanding loferh it, after it hath attained unto it.

Th'Archbihop of Burdeaux, feeing his attempts vaine at the Groine, defpairing of force, and his art being bound up by our men with chaines of timber, fet afhore two thoufand men at Perol. His Majefties forces (though not great ) caufed them to retreat rather confufedly then in order. He returned to the Groine, then putting to Sea, he failed out of fight, leaving every one fufpicious and doubtfull.

In the $\mathcal{F u n t a}^{\text {of State and warre th'opi- }}$ nions were different. Some believed the enemies thoughts were deep and impene-

## 64 <br> The chiefe Eversts

trable, Some faid their ends were to take the Groine, fome that it was to hinder the reliefe of Flanders, fome to ranfack the Fleet, fome to paffe into Italy, fome to joyne with the Holland Fleet in the Channell, fome to burne our fhips in their harbours, and fome that it was to fet upon Cantabria. Amongft fo many, and fo various opinions, there was one who began to fpeake thus ;

SIR, Though main may well be deceived in feeking, to divine or imagine what the ends and intents of mighty ones are, and the imagining to have found them may be hurtfull, yet it is neceffarie to difcourfe thereof, not to affirme what they will doe, but to hinder them from doing it. And as it is true that great Princes ends cannot be underitood, fo it is likewife certaine that the ends of great affaires may be found out, for the greatneffe it felfe difcovers them.
It is the opinion of fome, that this great Fleet was raifed for infcrutable ends. I forfake the opinion, or feare not the ends, eipecially in Spaine, where we need not doubt of any traitors that will yeild upHolds, or raife tumults in Kingdomes,

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 65

ad much leffe in this 3 unsa, full of fo excellent men, that it cannot be doubted chat they fhould in difcourfing, omit any thing which may be poffible. And if the enemies end be any of thofe that is difcourfed of, it is nor impenetrable, if it be known, it will be avoided, if not knowne, it will not be feared.

But becaufeit is more eafie to desie then to affirme; in affirmations, for the molt part, arguments of likelihood being ufed, and in negations, certaine demonftrations, it will be the eafieft way to Shew the intent of raifing this Fleet, by making known for what intent it was not raifed; for often-times where the truth of an cpinion camnor make it felfe known by it felfe, one may attaine to the doing of it by the fallhood of other opinions. An that which cannot come to effert by proving, may be gained by difproving.

It was not raifed to th'end to ranfack the Indian Heet which they ought fuppofe to have heen already come into Spaine, nor to hinder the reliefe for the Lnwe Countries, which they mioht imagine already arrived into Flanders nor

## 66

## The chiefe Events

to fire the Navie which they believed was gone. All thefe things being ordered to be done, fome moneths betere it came out of the harbours of France, and all (fave onely the Fleet) ftaid upon fuch accidents, as the French could neither fee nor imagine. The Forces, which the enemy hath fent to. Lexembrerg, and into the County of Artois, have caufed fome to thinke, that the intent was to land them in Flasders, an open and rich Countrie, abounding in fodder and victuals. And this opinion might be confirmed by the inftances the Hollanders made to the King of England, when be came to Cadis, that he fhould forfake the hopes of the barren fands of Spaine, and land his men in thofe fruitfull Provinces. But the King of France hath too many Forces in the Low Countries, and is too neere, and too mighty to have the Hollanders fuffer him to fet footirg there, mach leffe to invite him to it.

This opinion is controlled (as likewife another, viz, that they hould imagine to find fome part of Spaine unprovided to land their Forces there, and to take it) by an advertifement or animadverfion,

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 67

which is this ; Fleets doe manifelt which way their enterprifes tend by their forces. If their greatelt ftrenyth corfitts in Thipping, their intents are for the Sea, if in the ftrength of men, traine of Artillerie, provition of horfes, they intend land fervice. But this Fleer being powerfull in veffells of grear burden, withcut any horfes, or carriages for Ordnance; weake in men, which are new railed, of a bafe condition, and violently thipped, gives no caufe to feare any conq̧uelts by Land; And much leffe can we be perivaded that it is intended for Italy, by reafon of the place where they were built, namely the Ocean Sea ; the greatneffe of the fhips dangerous for the Mediterranean, and the prolperous ivind they have had to goe thither, and went not.

The enemies thought may (in mine opinion j be to draiv us, with the feare and report of the Army, to lurnifh all the fea coalts of Spain with men; and they to affault with the Navie of Marseilles the Counti: of Ronciglione, incouraging the Army whic' is there, and fath already taken Salfas, to befiege Perpignake, and with the Fleet in the Ocein, and the
forces which are raifing about $B$ ayona, by Sea and Land to invade Cantabria, lay fiege to St.Sebaftian, firt difperfe our forces into divers parts, and then force them to cone ftrongly into feverall places, thinking it impoffible for us to defend a valt Countrie, and with two mighty Armies to relieve two invaded Provinces.

There is an erroneous opinion fpread amonglt the chiefe Officers of France, that the Spaniard hath no men, and amongt the common fort of Spaniards another, that the French have no mony. A Monarch that hath great flore of mony, may find men enough. And a King that hath great ftore of men, if obedience be not wanting, never wanteth mony. I am confirmed in this opinion by feeing that this Fleet liath already layen a moneth failing to and fro before the Groine without attempting any thing; It workes towards its end, without doimg any thing.

1 believe it would willingly fet upon the Fleet, burne our fhipping and gladly hinder the reliefe of Flanders, and much rather difcomfit it and that if it found a Port of importance neglected, it would

## in the Spanifb Monarchy.

fet uponit, as things cafually and occafronally laid before them, which fall in their way, and fometimes come to be eafilier effected, then thofe which were at firlt conceived; Like unto the difference there is between a child at firf conceived, and one that is bringing forth, the one comming forth into the light alive, and she other fometimes vanifhing away, walting in its teginning, or when it is reduced to an embrio.

I promife not my felfe, that I have penetrated into thintent of the French, neither doe I care. When the enemy will performe an enterprife, and fet upon that can performe no other, it conduceth much to a defence, if one can penetrate into it ; but when he thinkerh to doe one thing and may doe many, the beft deferce is ignorance. Notice caufeth man to fecure that part which is threatied, and fuffer the reft to be neglected. And that being fateguarded, caufeth the enemie eo alter his mind, and the other neglected, helps him to attaine to that upon which his altered mind is fixed.

Hee that hath not power to defend himfelfe in all parts, doth neceffarily iofe

## The chiefe Events

himfelfe, for want of frength. He that hath fulficient, lofeth himfelf fometimes through careleffeneffe, and fometimes through too much providence. The knowledge of the affailing enemies inrention is an eafe when it is good to know it, and a difficultie when the notice cfit is hurtiull. For where he can doe but onely one thing, it is likely fecured, and where hee may doe diverfe, the underltanding knoweth not how to refolve upon one, and it would make the other eafie if it were refolved upon.

The Count Ditke hath with adnirable wirdome fecured the difficu ties of provifionall things. The chief Ports are fulficiently furnithed. Cansabria is fet in polture of detence. to hinder the enemy if hee Thou'd affaile it, Catalonia readv to thrult him out when he is ceme in. Don Anthonio Ochersdo, ready in the ftreights to fecure the Fleer. The Marquis of Villa Franca with the Gallies to oppofe the fhipps of Marfeilles. Every thing provided for and armel.

But our difcourles and the enemies defignes were carried away with the wind, which rifing tempeftuous, \& lafting three dayes

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. II

dayes (a thing unufua! at that time of the yeare ) brought the Fleet in danger of over fetting or finking. The leffer Siips perifhed in the Ocean, in the furie of the tempelt. The biggett of them in a calme Sea, when they were going into harbour. As if it did prefage danger of Thipivracke to great ones in tranquillitie of peace, entring into harbour, or in the harbour it felfe, by fome revolution of State, after the little ones were perithed in the turbulencies of Warre.

The enemy being become Mafter of the field by taking of Sal $\int a r$, tooke all places which lay open, and ordinarily follow the fortune of the moft powerfiall. He never skirmifhed nor fought with our cavallery, but we carried away the beft of it, Mewing that the Spanifh horfe are no way inferiour to the French, if we had them. The long peace this Province hath enjoyed, the warres at Sea where there is no ufe of horfes,forraigne warres, fometimes in the Indies where we could not convey them, fometimes in Flanders where foot did the greatelt execution, fometimes in Italie, or Germany where we found Auxiliarie ones, D 4
made us firf to neglet the ufe of them, then grow careleffe in bringing them up.
But ir is either the convenience or fate of the greatelt Monarchies, to have their chief ftreng,th and prop to confilt in the foor; the Remases in their Legions, the CMacedonians in their Phalanges, makirg up their Cavallerie, alwayes with Itrangers, friends, or Auxiliaries.
Many yield to opinton, when they have neglected art, and after they have yielded for a time, going to try whether the conceipt be true or no, they are overcome, and yield againe, confeffing themfelves inferiour in valour, when they are onely inferiour in pratife. Through this deceit the Spaniards ivould have tried and yielded a thoufand times, if ivarres hat nor happened in Spaine it felf, where neceffitie hath forced, and time undeceived them.

His Majelties Arny hadnot as yet any convenient number, it did enough, doing nothing, feeing it hindered the enemy from much doing. But the Souldier partly valorous, and parcly inexperienced, fome for thame, \&r fome through

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 73

interest, defired to co ne in fight of the French, and fight with them, and he defired it molt who had never sene the enemy, nor knew not what fighting was.

The Commanders for a while did fItly their heat, rather then allay it. Being perfivaded, that as in a fickman, fo in a Souldier, one ought to hope, where he hopeth, and feare, where he feareth (a rule which is false, in that hope, which often deceiving, cauferh good robe looked for where there is evill, and onely true in the feare, which though deceived, may bring forth.evill, even where it doth not find it) they went with a fall Army, partly of new, and partly of not difcip.'ined men, to fee the enemy, and fair his advantage fo great; that they retreated without doing any thing. The King and his Councell hat prefently a lively fee. ling of this diforder : what ircouragemont the enemies might gamine, and nat mentofe. And became the Army cons fruited of people of that country, conmandod by the Count of Santa Colombia and of hired men, halle was made to fend them a valorous and expert Chieftaine, who with generally applause vas Don Pb:-

## 74 The chiefe Evients

lip Spinola Marquis of Balóafes.
Tuis man was lonne to Marquis Ambrofe Spinola, the renownedit isenerall o our age and one of the greateft that hittories mention. He folloveth his Fathers ftepps in martiall affaires to revive the glories of them and he filleth them up fo, what ivith valour, what with wifedome, that it fhall ferve to fay for the praife of them both; of the one that he ivas borne of fuch a father, and of the 0 . ther that he begnt fuch a fome.

The Count Duke gave him his firlt imboffement in the belt way as fuch a Subject could doe, who being one of the greatelt Generalls is defective in no guality. Which this one thing would make envy it lelf confefle. Na nely that his engagement of being prefent in all Armies by direction, hindered not his genius from being perfonally prefent in one. His not fighting in any, may hinder him from being filed a great Souldit $r$, but his commanding there will admit to the title of a great Generall.

He that knoweth (as the Count Duke doth) both his Kinos, and the enemies forces ; Tae are of fighting, the place

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 75

where they fight, and thath (like him)had experience o: io many warres, framed fo mạny Armies, withltood fo many difafters, given advice in fo many enterprifes, and with his counfell difpofed and obtained fo many ${ }^{\circ}$ Vistories, may we.l governe Armies, and ftay at home, command them, and be ablent. Tne fivifuneffe of Pofts makes that which is farre orf to be neere, the frength of the underitanding foreleeth what is to come, and though he cannot affirme whit an enemy will do before he doth it, it is fufficient if hee knoweth what he fhould doe. The good is onely one, but the evill manifold: The firft is to be knowne by great ivifedome, and the other is no great matter wherher it be knowne or no. To inftru.t a Generall of an Army, it is enough to teach him wayes to defend himfelfe from the enemy, and how to offend, when hee doth well, for if otherwife his own errour will inftruit him by erring.

The Cardinall of Vallette was already ftrong in lealie, and did hourely look to: the Dake of Liongeville to corre with thofe Troopes which were defined m the harmes of Burgsendie. The Dutcheff:

## 76

openly profeffed fhe would receive them in CNormiglian, Sufa, and Carmagnuola. The Marquis of Legaxes lay under Santia, which being taken, Cafal was quire blocked up; and though it was a very ftrong Caftle, it had vistuals but for eight dayes: Prince Thomas was of opinion togoe into Piemont with the Army, to win thofe p'aces before the comming in of the French. Ulrging that the Countries were willing to receive them, and invited them thither. That they once loft their opormnity of beffeging Trines through the defire of ftreightning Ca Sald That the Frenches Itay, before they came into Piemont, and the Spaniards quickneffe in winning of that place, had caufed the opportunity to be rather deferred then loft.
That if now they would retard upon the fame pretence, and ftay till Santia was taken, the occafion would be loft. That remedies fhould not be fought for the feet, where the difeafe proceeded from the hea 1. That Smtra might be held in play with fmall forces.

That beir in fight of the enemy in Piemont, he could not reiieve Momferrat;

## in the SpaniJh Monarchy. 77

the Duke of Longevill might behindered from joyning with the other forces:thofe Holds would be taken, and fo they would remaine mafters of the field. and of the paffes of Savoy to Burgusdy jand Flanders: that the French would be confined in $P \mathrm{~g}_{-}$ marole, without vistuall to maintaine themfelves, or Gountry to reffit, whereby they would bee forced to come into thefe pares with great Atrength to defend themfelves, and fo foriake the hopes of Elanders and Burgusdie, give over molelting of Spaine, and laying downe their vaft imaginations be brought to a good peace.

That giving them time to get inco thofe Holds, was the dividing of Piemont, and bringing perpetuall warre into it, more dangerous for him that is neerelt with his ftate, and furcheft off with his forces. That the enemie might there with fmall forces defend himfelfe, and put Flasders in danger; or come with much Arength, and indanger the flate of CMilan.

If the Dutcheffe did not adnit chem into Turin, it would bee impnilible for them to selieve Cafal; and if thee dit a tmir
admit them, it would be difficult; they would be oppoted by evill paffes, deep rivers, and dangerous places of abode.

That for a imall reiiefe it would bee fufficient if any neighbour Garrifon were encreafed ivith fifceen hundred Foot; and as for a great one it could no way bee compaffed : fighting would become neceffary, and then one might confider whether it were better to give batteli in the entrance of Piemont, with fo many retiring places at their backs, to goe into upon occalion of loffe, and fo many before them to conguer, in cale they overcame ; or to give it upon the very Frontier of the Scate of Millan, farre from any place to conyuer, and neere to lofe all.

That his Majefties Commanders had fumbied at Cafal (as at a fatall trone) with much danger to the Monarchy; Once thinking to furprize it by intelligence; and another to take it by force, and this would be the third in going about to block it up from reliefe.

The Marqueffe of Legames being fcanred of men by difeafes which had killed many, by overthrowes which he had given, ftill with fome bloud; and by places which

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 79

which he had taken, and was bound to put garrifons into, thought he could not without danger goe farre from what hee had gotten, and expofe himfelfe with fmall tired forces to fight with a multitude of frefh fouldiers: which either oc cation, or neceflity might eafily have enforced him tc. That the Kings civef. interett confifted in detending the state of Millass that Santiabeing taken Cafal remained guite cut off from all re iefe. That ftaying in thofe parts, he could make all hee had gotten fure, unleffe it were $\mathbf{C i}$ uafco the en:langering of which could not counterpoile to many conveniences. That no hopes invited them into Piemont, but onely intelligences: which he had fo. often found vaine, that to confide in them would be a folly, and much more to put themfelves into irrecoverable hazzard if they fhould faile. That it was no great matter whether the French did get into thofe holds or no ; they could do no more in them, then out of them. They would ingage a number of men in them, would vexe the Inhabitants, and make them their enemies who before were their friends.

## 80 <br> The chiefe Events

The taking of Santia was made difficult to the Marquis. The hold of it felfe being ftrong, the ground without unfit for batteries, wanting wood to make fconces, and being without water, He refolved to befiege it at large. But the enemies forces recruited came marching towards Afit to relieve them. The Marquis encamped himfelfe in fuch fort that he could hinder their defignes and yetnot goe from the place, infomuch that the enemy lying on the other fide of $D_{0-}$ ra, within feaven miles of the place, victuals failing the befieged, they yielded themfelves. The Cardinall of Valetta, and Marquis Ville, defpairing of doing any good in thofe parts, went to befiege Civafco. Prince Tbomas and the Marguis drew neere it with their Army. but finding the enemy already fortified, and ivithout comparion furpalfing in number, they did not enleavour torelieve ityand fo the place was lolt.
In the meane time Conio a itronghold, and of great confequence for the gaining of Nizza. and Villa Franca declared it felf to hold with the Princes, The French

## in the Sparifh Moxarchy. 81

fer uponit, and were forced with great loffe to retreate. The Cardinall of Vablettacame thither with all his Army to befiedge it. The Cardinall of Savoy (refpeiting it as his owne creature) with more refolution then care, threw himfelfe into it to defend it. Prince Thomas nor the Marquis of Leganes had not confented to his engagement. But feeing the danger, they fought for a remedie.

They marched towards Twris with their Army, not with any certainty, but onely with a kind of hope to divert the enemy from his former enterprize, amd call him thither. And co make it fure, the Prince with the Marquis his advice refolved to attempt it. Which te did, and advancing forward one night with two thoufand horie, and a thoufand foore, he hung a pettarre upon the gate, fet fcaling ladders to the walls, and (though with refiftance and bloud) he wonne the Ci cie, where (a thing which feldome commeth to palfe) the prifonerswere more in number, then they who tooke them. The dutcheffe recovered the Cittadell, but foclofely purfued, that for want of

## The chiefe Events

time fhe was forced to leave even her very jewells behind her.

In this action were molt taken notice of, the Marquis of Carcesa Don CMartino of Moxica, and D. Francifoo Tuttavilla, who bravely relieving one another, revived the almoft extinguifhed hopes, and perfected thedefigne which was almolt defperate.

And this is the effet which the Cardinall of Savoy his phantafticallneffe brought forth, who bringing his brother and his friend into a ftreight, occafioned the taking of Tarin.

As births come not forth of a woman with child without great paine, fa the underftanding cannot bring forth without great labour. The expulfive vertue worketh not unleffe it be provoked, and belt, when molt; valour increafeth, and falls, according to wrath and intereft; and the underftanding through afflition. There is none naturally carefull or valiant man, but may be careleffe and fearfull, in refpett of him who is made carefull by danger, and valorous through difpaire.

The King of France his Fleet rather

## in the Spanifh Monarchy.

patched up then repaired covering its nakedneffe, with the fpoiles of Engliih, German, and Holland Ships which lay in the harbours of Brittanie, fet faile againe, and comming in fight of the Province of foure Cities, after fome tacking about came into Laredo, an open place, withour any forts to relieve it, or fouldiers to defend it, he tooke the towne, facked it, wafted the country abour, and robbing, ruining, and burning went abord againe. With the news of Laredo there arrived into France the the newes of the furprife of Turin by Prince Tbomas.

Paris and the whole Kingdome murmured, that fo many millions fhould be laid out upon fuch a powerfurl Fleet, to no orher end or profit but to fack a poore place, which had been a fmall matter for a poore fea rover to have done. Upon a mighty Army to take a Caltle which brought more loffe then gaine with it, cauling a great Army to be kept there, walting many men, and much money. That with there coftly vanities, the intere'? of Italie was'abandoned. friends, and the Royall bloud expofed
to dangers, fraudes, accidents and fortunc. They accufed the Officers of vanitie, that chey made difficult the fureft enterprifes where fomething might be gotten, walting time, and the bloud and fubtance of fubje?ts, in chote things which made but a faire fhew, and a great deale of noife. Perfwaded fometimes by paffion, fomerimes by emulation, racher to kindle coa'es, then conquer ltates.

To thofe who defended them by faying, that the powerfullelt way to deftroy the Monarchie was to fet upon it in Spaine; for keeping the Warre chere, and diverting it from other places, the selt of the dominions were cut off from reliefe, where there was continuall need of men and money; They anfivered that to detend Italie by invading Spaine, Flanders and Burgundie, was to make one plant grow by fowing of another ; that it was wafting of Cold in Alchimie ; and like thinking to make Gold of Mercurie, and braffe, and give over digging it out of the mines.

That it was not to be thought a fmall matter co divert the Marguis of Leganes

## in the Spanifh Monarcloy. 85

fortune in its fierce beginning, and that it was impoffible to doeit with a Fleet in the Ocean that fired three or foure Araw ricks, or with a powerfull Armies taking a fmall Caftle in the County of Rosciglione, and that they could much leffe make piemont fecure with onely diverting the enemies forces, and not defending it.
That diverfion required, an opportune time; great forces, and profperous fortune. That the Romans did not nsake ufe of it with Aniball in the torrent of his vistories, but after his firft violence was palt, and when (though his courfe were not faid) his tury was affwaged. That they oppofed him ftrongly in one place to call him to another; that they forfooke not the defence of. It alie, when they invaded Africk, and did not only divert him with Armies, but tyed him to it with victories.

But whofoever fhall at this time attencively conider the fate of France, the houfes full of bloud, the neighbcuing Inands full of exiled men, the Kingdome of tributes, the publick priviledges can. celled private mens goods taken away,

Subje:ts

Subjeits difcontented, Heretick; multiplyed under the name of overcome, the Province deftroyed under pretence of reforming, every thing by nature turned upfide downe, and by violence kept quiet, may know that the endeavours which are ufed to maintaine the Swede in Germanic with Itore of money, to affault Spaine, Flanders, and Germanie with powertull Armies, are prudent and neceffarie, that the evill may not penetrate into the invard parts of a body full of very evill humours. And that the olory of being an invader, loffes diffembled; conqueits multiplied and increafed, may fo fill the ears of the Parents, that they may not heare the grievous groanes of their facrificed children refounding in their aire.
Order was given the Count of Santa Columba, that he floould not undertake any new enterprife before tharrivall of the Marqueffe of Balbajes. who !tayed fo long, that before him came the Maroueffe of Torracusa the reft of the Count Dukes Regiment, the olftertiaes of Cantabria the horie and foer difembargued out of the Neapolitan and Sicilian Gal-

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 87

lies, fo that at his comming he found the Army numerous and valiant, defirous of enterprifes, and able to performe great ones ; But becaufe the enemy prevailed in number of Cavairie, and many recruits were by him daily expected; it was confidered of in the Junta of State and warre, whether it were good to goe find him out and fight with him. And there was but one who was of opinion that we fhould not give battell.

That we ought not to fight with the enemy, when we were too weake, and that if ive were too ftrong we could not. Hee would retreat into France, ivhere the purfuit of him would bee impoffible through want of vistuals, fotherage, and traine of Artillery. And that we were then to fight with them in their owne Country where their reare was fecured, their provifions certaine, and their Cavalrie advantagicuc.

When the evemy is not afraid, if it be a thame to feare, yet it is wifedome to doubt, and this Monarchie ought net to be expofed to a doubrfull fortune, which adverfe may make us unhappy, and profperous can adde no felicity to us.

## 88

## The shiefe Events

Princes take Citizen-like advife, when they adventure their eftates upon a point of reputation, which confifts not in the loffe of a Caltle in the mid'lt of warres, but in the ending of them with great Conguefts, or an honourable Peace.

Finally it would doe fmall good ta overthrow she French Army in Autumne, and to regaine Salfas much leffe, but to lofe a battell, might bee a great prejudice.

And if we fhould win it, the enemie by vertue of their numerous Cavallerie might retire with little loffe with the remainder of their Army by th'alfiltance of the Sea, it being now Otfober, and having fo poputous a Councry mighe by the Spring be recruited. Durs would diminifh in the fight, and more afterwards. Thofe of the Province thinking the enterprife to bee at an end, and chat they bad done encugh to maintaine their reputations being raw in the profeffion, iveary of the field, and troubled by the waters which were naturally neere upon comming would hinder the tefieging of Salfas, or the gaining of it, if it were befieged.

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 89

To know what his Majelties vistorius Army would doe in Catalonia. let it e conlidered what they did in Cantabria. If.any thing had remained to doe fter the Battell, there was nothing left o due it withal. Armies raifed in Spain, as if they were raifed but for one end) ait but for one enterprife.

Tie profit attained by the winning of Salfas, would not counterpoife the dammage that might fol ow a difater, which God forbid. This Army being overthrowne; which for want of Horle (if conquered) would bee quite del royed; How could it be recruited in a Councry farce beth of horfe and men, at fuch a time as the proud conquering enenyy, emboidened, would prepare to affault. Cantabria by land, and having a mighty Fleet at Sea, would engage us; eith $r$ to fecure this valt circumference of Soaine, or oppole them with a greater Fleet betide, that which is needfull to convoy the Plate Fleet, defend Brafiland guard the Streichts.

Where fhould men be levied, if there were fighting in fo many places, efpecial$1 y$ it we imagined we were to fight where

## The chiefe Events

there is now no fighting, being bound to defend all this Province, belides Italy, Germanic, Burgundif, Flanders, and the Indies?
That the enemy had an advantage above us, viz.that hee could beare many loffes. Hee was this yeare overthrowne at Theosville, and routed with great flaughter, and at the fame time he tooke another Hold, and within few dayes came into the field againe with a new Army. The laft yeare at the Siege of Fountaisa, rabie hee loft a Batrell, and he is now returned more powerfull both by Sea and Land, giving us caule of feare one way; and another way befieging Holds, and winning them.

If the French doe not take Perpignane, they have done nothing, nor we, if wee take not Narbona. They will not take Perpignase with keeping Salfas, nor wee $N$ arboxa by routing of them.

The belt revenge one can take, is to take none. The greateft conqueft is to be content with loffe. If a man cannot alwaies conquer, when he lofeth, a fmall loffe, it feemeth to be a great victory, and many rimes it is a preparation to it.

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. II

It is earlier to gre on in profperaus fortune, then to flop in a difafter. The one doth not pleafe the mind with fo powerfull a charme, as the other with a tharp goad wounds it. He that fops in good fucceffe, oftentimes loses it, he that doth it in a difalter, oftentimes changers it.

Two foal things ruins a poole a little victory, and a imall loffe; in the one be growth careleffe, in the other he is provoted. Being careleffe, hee lofeth that which he had not gotten, and provoked, hee adventures that which hee had not loft.

That Battells ought to bee given in France by any other way but this, getting into the heart of ir, and driving it to defend it felfe. There is a difference between fighting with one who defender himfelfe, and with one that offends. The firft being overcome, hath loft the means of defending himfelfe, and the other may defend himelfe with that which he hath not loft.

The Romans at the fame time as they avoided fighting with the Carthaginians in Italy, lent Scipio to fight with them in Africk.

## 92 <br> The chiefe Events

Hee that overcommeth in France, Italy and Germany, thall be the umpire of the world.

That it was not fitting to leave it to a Generalls will, to fight, or in t: if they be not much inferiour, they will fight. They fee tho re who laft yeare diffwaded it, have lolt their credit. They find this counteli inclining to it, and they will adventure to put that reputation in gueltion by fighting, which they would be fure to lofe hy retiring.

The Count of Lauta Columba would have foughr before it was time ; Marqueffe spinola doth judge it to bee time now. One is moved by one reafon, the other by another, and both (if they be left to their own mind ) will fight.

This Army, which is the moft flourithing that hath been feen in this Monarchie fince the memorie of man; either may he loft in batcell, or walted in a fiege, and either lolt or walted, there will not fuch anorher bee gotren together in a hundred yeares, for ic is a hundred years fince any fuch was feen.

They fould keep it till fuch time as they might better fecure themlelves from

## in the Spanifb Monarcly. 93

loffes, and profir themfelves more by vifories. They fhould imagine Perpignane was the Frontire. They thould lodge their Army, maintaine it, increafe it. The Spring would now where it might belt bee employed : and the Gallies would convey it where need fhould require.
Contrary to this another began to fay; $S 1 R$, There is amongft Counfellers a maxime more wylie then honeft, prolitable for themifelves, but molt pernicious to Princes, visz. not th give any dangerous counfells, but to let Princes take them of themfelves. The intent is to a-: void danger, and hatred, which is done by expofing their Lord to hatred, and a-: bandoning him to danger.

It is a miltake of a thatlow braine, ra. ther then deepe wifedome $t^{\bullet} \dot{\text { diffivade }}$ battels when there is no greater reafon then the danger of trying it. That which is loft cannot be recovered nor that defended which is affaulted, but by cndangering what remaines.

The prefervative power in man. which fiveetly poverns the body, when it is in health, if once fet upon by fickneffe goeth not about to footh it up, it ufeth violence,

# 94 <br> The chiefe Events 

affalts it, and adventures to overcome it, putting it to the fortune of a Duell, either to live or die.

If your Anceftors had not adventared themfelves in battells, they had not conquered, if your Majetty doth not advencure, he will lofe. No Monarchie did ever fubfift long, if it did not fometimes adventure.

Saying, that the enemy ought to bee ootten out of Spaine by diverting not by battell is a vanity. Either he would not be turned away, and we fhall then remain weaker, or if he be diverred, wee thould bat onely change our darger. Confider nature, which employing irs forces to divert humors raw, before the hath overcome them, ifbeing violented they yeeld unto her, it lames, and kills, not heales; if they contumacioully refitt, having weakened her ftreagth by feeking to divert them, it remaines unable to overcome them : The then obtaines her end, when The firft concoits, and then diverts them. That is a wife diverfon which is made not with an intent to begin Victories, but to perfect them when they are begun.
The fortune of the French is fudden like

## in the Sparifth Monarchy. 95

their temperature : it rifes and fets in the ame field, and as it is hard to overcome it when it growes, fo it is fecure when it declines. When occafion is come, he that through weakneffe lofeth it, or through ignorance doth not know it, never feeth it a gaine. He that paffeth by ripe fruit and doth not gather it, when he comes again, either it is gone, or grown rotten; whether it be that nature is an enemy to fimplicitie and ignorance, or that th'imperfection of worldly perfeition comes late, ftayes but a while, and falls fuddenly. Fortune comes to every one at fome time; molt are put off becaule they knew her not, not becaufe they had her not, and all may become happy, if they knew how to goe about it. When the Romans determined to give battell no more in their owne Country, they had given it there foure times already ; It was not wifdome but faintneffe, nor becaufe they had gotten more brain, but becaufe they had loft their hearts in fo many battels with fuch unfortunate fucceffe. That which difheartened them, ought to encourage us, who have once given bastell and won it, and have overcom, as often as we have fought.

If the Romanes had gotten the better in the firlt battaile. Hannibal mult have dyed there, or gon back difcomfited. And it would now have rumne in Polititians pennes that we ought to fight with the enemy prefently, and not give him time to take footing in the country, nor affault it, to difhearten the men, \&e deftroy the land :Iffortune fould prove adverfe, we might with the remainders keepe the country, and with thefe entire parts at the back of them renew the Army, and try our fortunes againe, if it thould prove profperous we might undoe the enemy. One vi凡ory would fuffice to become conguerors, and by one overthrow we Thould not be overcome. But becaufe: the Romanes were overcome, the Coun-cell is blamed, whereas the execution of it thould, having loft rather through want of va'our and difcipline, then of wiidome.
It is much that Scipio a young man his advice, who was more rafh for his owne glory then for the profit of the common wealth, great in eftimation not for what he twas, but for whathe came to be, applaudel onely by the people, not by the Senate

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. <br> 97

senate fuffered ratiner then allowed of ivhen they could neither difivade nor hir-der him, Thouid now bind men in all agesto follow him, heing favoured by torune which onely didapprove of him, condemned by Fabius CMaximus his reafons, by the authority of a whole Senat, and much moie by the experience of his Father and Uncle who in che reife fame enterprie wirn ltt e glory lolt part of their Army and theif liyes.
Many opinions are defended by t'ee refpeit is borne to gray haires, and many: are borne up to the reverence due to the Majeftick memory of antiguitie. It is more harih to bring ones mind to thinke, they are falle, then to find they are fo: and vet it is a manner of deifying antiquity to believe their fayings, withour examining them.

When Scripio wentinto Affrick it hat peradventure bin better to have chana ged Captaine then Country. With that power, that Army, and that his valour: he miohemore fecurely have conguered in lialie. Andif he lolt in one place he might atfo have loft in ancther. Veitber could he have recovered himfelte; being

## 98 <br> The chiefe Events

fo farre from the Romans affiltance, nor peradventure they, having fent him away fo farre from them. He overcame, it is true, but who will deny that he might have bin overcome? if he had fought in Italie he had made fure the vistory ; be caufe he overcame in Africk he increafed the common-wealth, if he had loft, he had ruined it. The conqueft had bin vaine in one part, to have remedied the loffe in the other. In Italie the com-mon-wealth had gon to ruine, in eAfrick Scipio had become King.

Then if all that the Romases. had, confifted in the end, fuccefle, and fortune; of the forces of Italie, why did they wea ken, and abandon it?

In our times the Duke of Bavarin joyned with the Spanifh forces, might have taken the Palatinat, and yet he went to feeke the Palfgrave, where he had hrs Army, not his dwelling, Knowing that if he lort in Bobemia it was in vaine to Conquer in the Palatinat.

Let what hathbin in times palt, be as it will, either well difcourfed according to reafon, or favoured: by fortune. This Mcnarchy, now the biggelt that ever
was, mult not make ule of others examples, the of it felfe, ought to bean example to it felfe.

One ought not leave the doing of a good thing, to doe a better; when both may be done, efpecially when they doe not hinder, much more when they further one another. In our cafe conquering the enemy in Renciglione doth affift, and not difturbe the going to $P$ aris. .
Let us then Sir try to overthrow the French here, to profit our felves' by the vittory, to call him to defence, to offend him elie where, and overcome him every where. It was not Scipio his Army in Africk that overeame the Carthagini aws, but thofe fores which they had confumed in Italie. So it may befall the French to lofe themfelves at home, by going to much abroad.
Ler us fig't with this enemy in France in Italie, in Flanders, by Sea, by Land, wherefoever we find him, feeing weConc, uer him wherefoever we fight with him. The dangers which feeme to threaten, are not fuch as at firft they feeme: to be. There was feldome a battaile loft but that fome pare of the. Army hath

## 100 . The chiefe Events

bin fave 1: The remainders, though never fo fmall, will ferve to hinder the enemy from further proceedings, the gold and men of Spaine, to repaire it on all fides: the Otficers valour futficient to doeit, and the feafon, willaftoid time for it.

They are deceived that hold Spaine to be a defert flice. There be dinmabited and barren places, hut there are likewie may populows, and fruitfull. And it is fo large, that not counting the firft, meafuring onely the laft, it would be foun 1 higger then the fruitfullett Country of Europe.

Deduations and confeguences from times, pa't to the prefent are dangerous, their examples are not available. The knowle ge of events, ifnere at hand are decitfull iffarre off, falfe. Fighting now is diverfe from what it was, there are othermen, another age, and (I will fay it) another world.

The lunta agreed that battaile foould be given, Marquis Spinola who adivanced to feeke out the. Frencin Army. Overtaken by night whenhe drew nere it. he never laid hand to poade made no

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 101

rench, acfence or tortitcation but fet his Army open in hattai e arrayo. The enemy retired towards his owne Courrtry, drew nere to alfas, under the fateguard of thar place, at the recoverng of Which the minds of the greast part of the Spanith Comutanders leenedoto ayme.

Marcuis §inola was perplexed. He had many mporant diffilues betore his eyes. The time of yeare farre fpent, the Country cold the Climat unhearthfull; the long drougho which had inin; threatned, great fore of rainc, finall provilion of food none of Fother, the ground: bare to make hutts for his Army, Ifony to intrench it no foffe to makeany fhe!ter, no Pioners, nor Gunners, nor Founders, few inftrumenss to worke tvith, miners fever, the former unfitted, the latti $r$ inexpert. The place fortified without and lined within, Ordoance, Ammunition, and Men, more then abundanto. The enemy encanped about it, to hinder it from being befieged and it ready to receivetimifthe were affalted. Forced to fight before he could befrege, and expore himfelfe to a dangerous batuale,

## 102 The chiefe Events

for to begin an incert aine enterprize : a loffe would put him in great danger, and one Vistory not fufficient to make a conqueft.

The water, the fivord, and want would undoe the Army. The Sou'diers would forfake their Colours, being wounded. fick, and wearied. They mult be relieved with men out of Cantabria, the Shippes and the Gallies with old and new Levies; To forfake their enterprifes, would make the reliefe of Italie impoffible, weaken the defence of other Provinces, and growing obftinate about a fmall Caftle, wculd make all provifions for the future field difficult.!

And if the enemy fhould refufe to fight, and goe back with his Army entire, reft it, encreafe it, and having an eye upon ours, when he faw it diminified and wearied, thould let upon it powerfull and frefh ; it would be a fhame to retreate dangerous to meet him, and more to ftay for him. The ordinary manner of intrenching would be hard, the extraordi. oary impoffible. The quarters of neceffirie muft bee fo diftant, that they thould not in an inftant relieve one another e-

## in the Spanith Monarthy. 103

very thing would be weak and difunited; fo that the enemy might in a darke night give alarme in divers places, fet upon one quarter ftrongly, and take it, fo we mighe lofe them all witheut fighting, but oneiy with the hands of a few, and peradventure the weakelt. If we fhould goe to meet him, weemult either forfake and night our trenches, and the labour of many dayes would be loft, which ( the time of yeare confidered ) would not bee made good againe in many weekes. Or wee muft leave men to guard them, and that would weaken the Army, tying it to fight with notable difadvantage.

The Marguis defired nothing more then to give battell, and nothing affured him of victory more, then to give it quickly.

In this perplexity was Spinola, when by the advice of the Count of Santa Colum: $b_{a}$, and other head Officers, it was refolved to fend all the Horfe, and foure thoufand Foote to view the place, and the enemy,

Thefe forces were commanded by the Maquis of Torrecufa, Field-Marfhall Generall, and with him the Marquis of

## 104 <br> The chiefe Events

Arema. Being arrived, they found the French guartered behind the Fort Torrecufa determined to try them with horie andfoot; he caured fobn de Arza the field Marfhall to advaince with a fly ing fquadron, he gave the charge of the foot skirmin to the Marquis of Mortara. It biegan with fuch valour of our Horfe and Foot, that gining ground; they prefently forced the enemy terrified and loft, no forlake their ftand and retire under command of Mulquet thot of Salfas with grear loffe of men, and greater of reputation, leaving their quarters and tents in the hands of tae co quering Spaniards. The relpefe of the Ordnange and Mufquet fhot from the Caltle would not have faved them, if night, and a confuled retreat, and orderly flighe with much filence had not conveyed them further off.

This fight had engaged the Kings Ge neralls to advance with the whole Army, and though they arrived before day, thinking to fight with the enemy at the daw ning. yet they found him already retreated. They determined to feiz upon a Fort royall, and Redout which was upon the

## in the Spanifo Monarchy. IO5

hill; wherein they had profperous fucceffe.

Death fayed the courle of many, yer abated no mans courage, where it hit not it rerrified not, Itirring up wrath in the relt, in ftead of compaffion as it ordinarily doth where valour is above feare.

They put the enemy to flight, they entered the Fort and. Redout and having got thee, with the fame va:our they gained the reft of the out-ivorkes.

Then the whole Army charged the place with more courage then difcipline, For the officers endeavoured to have themftay, and fhelter themfelves there. But the fouldiers in that rage refuling it, could nor be itayd by fear nor roounds. For though their Flankes were difcoyered; and lay open to bullets, fire, and tones, many drunke with valour runne to the very Gate to hang on a Petard, and others into the Dike to affault the Wall, not difcerning poffibility from impolfibility, efteeming every thing eafe for the courayious, and nothing fhut up from a valiant man. In this fight, all the Field Marthalls and particular men behayed themfelves

## 106 Thechiefe Events

themfelves valiantly, efpecially the Count Duke his Regiment, which being all of old fouldiers, and reformadoes, Commanded by the Marquis of Mortara, and Don fobndi Arza, made it felfe to bee knowne for the chiefe fquadron of the Army.
In the enemies flight, or retreat, the French his Letters happened in the Spaniards hands; There were fome of the Cardinall of Richlienes which fpake fomewhat modeftly. Some from a Secretary of State, which were more arrogant ziz. that they expeited in Paris to heare that the King of France his Army was penetrated into the very bowells of Spaike, made the Provinces defolate, and taken the Royall Pallace of Madrid. The Duke of Luin his conceits gave more fcandall then any thing elfe. For he being efteemed a valiant and ivife Captaine, it was frange to heare, that when our men had fet upon his Cavallerie, (which was divers times ) and had alwayes made it retire or runne a.vay, hee fhould write That our men having prefumed, to fet upon a feiv of their Horle, with many men, fome eight or ten of their Gentle-

## in the Spanifh Mosariby. 107

men comming in, had caufed ours to ran away, as if he would make Ariofto be believed, and turne him from a Poét to a Chronicler, making that a hiftory, which was once but a fable.

Nothing manifefted the deceipt more plainly then his lalt Letter, when hee lay with all his men under the fhelter of the Fortifications of Sal $\int a s$, he certainly pro-miled that the King of Spaine his Army would not dare to looke them in the face, nor come within Ganon fhotr of them, And yet within few houres he faw a' parcell of it fet upon him in his guarters, drive him out, rout him, and put him to flight.

Whileft they writ with fo much contempt of the Spaniards valour, the Letters of his Majeities Officers in the Army fake very honourably of the French, made their forces great, and (though truth had fiewed them to be faint-hearted ) gave an honourable report of them.

This which feemes in one part to bee folly, in the other weakneffe, if it benot art which forefees the want, is nature that provides for it. Where courage is wanting, it is good to take away the underftanding,

## 108. The chiefe Events

dertanding and where one cannot incourage to deceive. It is needleffe to Thew a valiant man, to have him fight, the fecureneffe of the bulineffe, if he but knowes what he fhould doe. He takes his vertue from him that conceales the danger to him. He deferves the name of valiant who knowing the danger by difcourfe, meets it with reafon.

The French manner produceth this effeet, that he being deceived fets fiercely upon his enemy, thinkng the will runme away. But if he finds himftiffe he oftentimes lofes his courage, and recovers hịs brain ; and whereas his firf motion was of an inconfiderate violence, his laft comes to be an abjecit mind, The Spainiards valiant in their onfer, purfue their enemies ralhly for having imagined $a_{\text {: }}$ refiftance; over ommingit, they think to find none greater. Therefore the French rearce being fet upon, fled, and the Spaniards being Conguerours, runne againlt the Wall,thinking the very ftones ivould yeeld to that Iteele, which rrenches and men had yeilded to.
Amidft thefe profperous, pleafing, and happy fucceffes, the Army put to flight,

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. Iog

the Fortilications ivonne, and the enemy retired into the Hold dejected. the difficulties of the fiege feemed to the Marquefle to be increaled by the death of fo many valiant Commanders and Souldiers rather ther decreafed, yet hee refolved to befiege it. Whether it was be caule the vistory did likewife enflamé him, which fulfered him not to confider of every thing or , vhet er fortune called him, which mult many times be followed blindfold, or whether the Armies vaiour perfivaded hin to it? or whecher molt of all likelihood bound him thereto, not knowing how to juftifie himfelfe, if hee did not beifege it to avoid the blame of great, and fmall ; ignorant and wife, when every Commander and Souldier gave it up for taken.

Counfell is hard againft likelihood: It requires a great underftanding, penetrating into the truth : a ftrong refolution againlt mur uring a heart not void of intereft, and not caring for his owne credit, things rare and neceffary in a fubjeft, and either are not to be found, or are not available. Li kelihood doth almott alwayes deceive, whether it be a punilh-

## 110 <br> The chiefe Events

ment for Princes againlt flattery, or the reward of wife men, for the welfare of Inberty. If their advices were believed, it would prevent the feeing of efferts, the onely way to undeceive a man.

So happy and profperous a beginning encouraged, and perfwaded the Officers and Souldiers; it is halfe the worke if we believe wife men, the whole, if Altrologicall foolifhneffe, which judging the event by the conftellation in which the action began, will believe this to bee favourable, and him happy if ir began well. Weymar was ftill in Burgurdie, who befides being a great Souldiour, was alfo a great Politician. I cannot affirme whether his great underltanding made him fuch, or whether time, occafion, and fortune made him onely feeme fc. He began at firlt to aflitt the French; he knew hee could not grow great that way ; then he cauled the French to affift him, and this hee knew could not lalt; if hee got for himfelfe hee fhould want helpe, if for others, hopes. He thought to make ufe of the moft Chriftian Kings forces to begin great enterprifes and by beginning them grow full of reputation, with reputation

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. III

to gaine forces of his owne, and with them, and that, to accomplioh his intents. He law the King of France defirous to gaine Burgundie, and that he knew not how to obtaine it, or being diverted could not. He endea voured to take part of it himelfe, thinking to exchange it for Colmar, Leiftar, and Benfelt. With which he defigned to overthrow Strafs burg, and formaintaine himfelfe with his owne forces, to alter the Scene, and perfonate another man; fet up a party of himfelfe, and gaine repuration by IVarre or to conclude peaces with advantage. Thefe thoughts feeme great, and are to. Yet they were no way difproportionab'e with the fortune and valour of that renouned Commander. The King of Erance who favoureth no man, fo farre as to affit him, but onely to be affifted, On the one fide fearing the Switzers anger, threatned by the injuries received from Weymar in Veiglia, a Country ufurped trom the Canton of Berna; On the other fide growen jealous of his conquefts in Burguxdie ; urged by the Swedes earneltneffe and called upon by the Marguis of Leganes vietories, would have had Wey-

## 1 II <br> The chiefe Euents

mar give ver troubling of Veiglia, agree with the $S_{w i t z e r s, ~ e n t r u l t ~ h i m ~ w i t h ~ t h e ~}^{\text {win }}$ coneguetts in Burguadie, and divert she Auttrians in Germanic.
All thefe things were inftancly moved to him by the French Ambaffalour refident in $S_{\text {witzerland, who met with him. }}$ The difcourlès ivere long Heceroiniled to give the Switzers fatisfaction, and fit himfeife to the times, for the tolls of the Rhine. For that which he had conguered in Bargundie, and for greater concuelts which he promited to atchieve he detired fupply of men and money. And becaufe the Ambaffadour perfwaded him to goe and affift the Swede in Germanie, and did peradventure encroach upon him more then Wegmars firic would beare; though tractable yet fterne, they fay (being moved ) he anfivered ;

That the King of Erance did aivaies requeft of him, fometimes Siegus, fometimes diverions, but he never fenc-him neither men nor mony. That hee had many Holds to defend; That hee was threatned by the Duke of Bavaria his Army affrighred by the King of Spaine, and th'Archdurcheffe Clandias forces,

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. $\mathrm{II}_{3}$

which were to joyne with him, if the Swede fhould be overcome by the Aultriaus, all Germanie would fall upon him, round begirt with enemies, having no confederate Prince neere him, onely Erance which was farre off, and did not affilt him. That he wanted men, his being almolt all dead by war and difeales; That the Country was able to mair taine him no longer, and his mony was fpent in providing for Nova-Villa, Brifack, Friburg. Than, Rinfelt, Laumfenburg and other places upon the Rbine. That hee Mould fallinto the hands of the firft that came againft him, and in a day lofe what he had gotten in co long time, and with fo much labour. That hee had no hope left but in his Sivord, and the valour of thofe Officers iwho followed him. That he knew his fortune was no better then other Princes who had affilted the French, hee was to be thankfull to her, becaufe the had remained longeft with him, be being the lalt to fall.

The Ambaffadour fought to quiet him; He promifed him money, and did indeed thare fome amongt the Souldiers : and whileft they were negociating the taking
of Salins, thereby to gaine the good will of the Switzers : or that of Dola, or BeSancon, to goe forward in their proceeddings, there came news of the overthrow of Teonrille, and the conquerts of the Spanifh forces which daily increafed in Italy, whereupon laying afide, or deferring thefe hopes, that meeting was ended. In the meane time the Switzers. were met at Baden.

The late Conqueit of Brifacke whereby the Navigation of the Rbine was thut up the former and prefent proceedings in Burgundie, by the King of France, and his contederates forces, and the greater which were feared, caufed the moft attentive Politicians to calt their eyes, to fee what the Switzers would doe therein, who ivere bound by confederacie, inter. Ated by traffick, and by all that as was or might befal'. Some faid that old grudgec not yet forgotten, fufpicions (though vaine of en renewed, Militarie art abandoned valour qualified, weapons rultied, and prefit proffered, all put tosether wouid finother up conveniencie and reafon of State; But the wifelt fort held fufpicions to be fo vaine, and the conve-

> in the Spanifb Monarchy. II,5
niencie fo apparant, that they were confident to fee the Switzers armed in defence of Juitiee.
If they would know what the King of Spaines thoughts were, they thould confider this Province, which fubject to him, hath moft happily enjoyed all the bletfings of liberty, and profits of Monarchy, the King aiting there the part, rather of a Proteitor then a King; Leaving to them the pleafure of living free, and taking upor himfelf the burthen of maintaining their freedome; That in Burgundie there is liberty, becaufe they enjoy it, and a Lord becaule they have none. That in cannot be imagined he will goe about to make of Common-wea'ths fubjects, who of fubjects makes Commonwealths.

If the King of Spaine hath Burgundy, they border upon a great power, but finall becaule he himfelfe doth not border upon Burgundie. If the King of France hath ir, they border upon the leffer power, but all. And if it were their convenience, and not their ruine rasher, to let that Province be lott, why fhe uld they bee enticed to it by proffers of the Salt pits?

## 110 The chiefe Events

It is not to be believed that he defireth a companion in his conquelts, that taketh away from companions, friends, kinlinen, nephews, and from them moit that he can getmolt.

That Commori-wealths may be bought as well as conquered. When it may availe the King of France to give away that which is other mens, to gain States; theirs were not fecure,, nor they Lords of them. Hee would give them another to fu've:t them, and hee Thould prevaile moft in the world who poffeffed leaft, having the more to give aivay: That a vaine miltrult of the Spaniards, and a molt vaine confidence in the French deceived them. That which may doe moft hurt, onght to bee feared, shough it were profitable; and that which can doe none, is to be upheld though it may bee thought hurtfull. Let them noteare the Ault iaus, but the French. A great power dif-ooyned from its Lord by having cut the bonds in funder with the Sivord, and a)olifhed the memorie thereof with time, ( there bee many examplss of it ) hath returned to its ancient yoake. And many are likewife read of, that have fallen

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. II7

under ancther, onely to keep themfelves from the firlt, whom they enght not to be afraid of, his anger being alliwaged, the thame forgotten, and the ffrength overcome : and yet there is nothing that doth more ruine them then this miltruft to free themfelves from which, they fail where they thought not. Even fo a itarting horfe being on the fecure fide atfrighted by fome vaine object, calting himfelfe inconfideratly on the other fide, breakés his neck downe a precipice. One might truly doubt that things would returne to be as they were, by the figure of the heaven; fron whence they have their influences. But what then? Though it be circular, they move with fuch diverie morions, and that heaven which giveth molt influences, moveth fo low a pace, that though every inflant they vary their atpest, there would an infinite number of yeares paffe away, before they (if it were poffible at all ) returned to the fame being.

A Nation fo vigilant, that hath formerly been moved throug' a little zeale, and once moved, hath gained fuch g'orious yintories, a terrible name, and war ike

## I 18 <br> The chiefe Events

renowne, how can it now choofe but bee ftirred up with miltrult, wrath, and fhame, feeing a King of France endeavour himfelfe to be Lord of Burgundie, after he had ftolne away Loraine, partly ufurped, and partly bought exlfatia, made himfelfe mafter of divers places in Savoy, Piemont, and Mostferrat, under pretence of preferying them? That trieth to enter into Elanders, and Spaine, to ruine Germanie, to overthrow the Empire, andmake himfelfe Emperour. And if he fhould come to be fo (as be undoubtedly would if the houle of Aufria did not hinder him) who would then defend them from fo great a violence? Peradventure that Juftice which wowld have no Tribunall Seat to appeale unto ? Titles are not wanting, where there is power. The areedy defire of commanding, though it be a molt unjuft p.agne, feemes to be the mother of Juftice, time t'e Father, and both being joyned, feeme to bring it forth.

That the King of Franse already blocked up their paffages from reliefe and traling, and would Thut them up likewife for corne impoverifh, ftarre, and fubdue

## in the Spanifb Monariby. II?

them; they being not able to live tree, who have not meanes of fubfitence comming to them freely.

If they thouid fo bafely forfake their confederates, they would lofe the reputation which their Anceltors had gained with the loffe of fo much bloud, and fo many conquelts, and feeing the default could not bee afcribed, either to conveniencie, or reafon of State, it would be attributed to feare, and they would fall in contempr if not flavery; That to preferve their libertie, it was neceffary for them, to fight; And for thofe, againft whom they fought, to obtaine it; It was determined ar the Diet, (as it was divulged) that to not engage themfelves they would mediate with the King of France: rather to obtaine a neutrality in Brgondie, then to oppofe him with violence.

Any one may bee a mediator in thofe things which are already counterpoifed in matter of interelt, for they want nothing but one to interpofe himfelfe, but when they are unequall there is no other way, but to make ones felfe a party; For in feeking to equall two unequalls,: hee lofeth his credit, time and friends, the F 4 nee

## 120 <br> The chiefe Events

one thinking himfelfe oftended, becaule he defired to hinder his fortunes, the other becaufe he would not helpe him in his diafafter.

In warres which are already ancient, there ought to be great caufe to make one entermeddle with them. They fee thore Countries which were fruitfull, and plentiiull, made barren, and poore, men impoverihned, houfes ruined, all things full of bloud, death, and miferie. They compare thofe loffes,to their happineffes. Neither doe they thinke that any bond, thame, or conveniencie, can be fufficient meanes to counterpoife the difafters of warre, with the emoluments of peace.

When there are bloudy and latting warres between mighty Kings, they that are not ingaged in them, looke on aftonifhed, and dejeited, and though they may wrong them, and fometimes doe, yet they can take no true counfell nor refolution. Tins which is true in all formes of State, is almolt infa!lible in a popular : it lives more conformable to nature then to art, it teacheth onely to defend its own when occafion ferves, and never before. Monarchie and Ariltocracie often lofe themfelves

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. I2I

themlelves by leeking to get what is ancthers : and Democracie ometimes by fuftering it to be taken away.

The Switzers to the perfivafions of neutrality, had added a proteftation, That if the molt Chriltian King followed the warres in Burgundie, they thould be driven to recall their forces which ferved him. And becante they were but fmall, of no profit, and great ctarge to the King of Eranoe; it was a threatning hurtfull to them onely that made it which canfed every one to judge it vaine, and of no moment.

Yet I will adventure to fay, that the mortfuller the Proteltation was to the Swit:ers, the more it was to be feared by the French King. Heethat doth hurt in Thewing himfelfe to be diftalted, feemes tobe by that aiready fatisfied. Hee that receives hurt fhewes a token that he will have fatisfaction. .

I ca not believe that fo warike and honourahle a Nation will to thamefully forlake the Burgundians in 'uch an urgere cale withoue any occalion, or infamonfly by trking a reward to dne it.

Weymar left Portagleerand Jowx, con-

## 122 The chiefe Erients

trary to his conveniencie, it being a moft important paffe. And burned them contrary to his promife, for which hee had received money fufficient. Hee went to wards Alfaria, and without attempting any great matter, either chere or in Burgundie, he died.

This Nobleman was a man of his own interel. He was no friend to the King of France, whom he being a German abhorred as a ftranger; Hee was an enemy to the houfe of Auftria, which hee (defcending from Duke Marrice of Sax ${ }^{-}$ nie ) hated; he was of a turbulent minde, various in fortune, he loft ofmer then he got, yet got more then he had lolt. His fprits were generous, his bloud roya:l; expert, and very valiant in warres; better known through our mens defauls. then his oivne vitories. Seeing the greateft that he obtained ivere the overtirowing of Jobn Vert, when be was careleffe, and the taking of Brifack when it was unprovided. The hopes which through his reputation he bal f:amed, for the raifing of bis Fani ie, ended with his life.

There hapoened rhis yeare no loffe of any value in Burgundie. The faithfu!neffe, prodence.

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 123

prudence, trult, attention, and vigilancie of Don Awtonio Sarmiento, who by the Kings command was there; Marquis de Leganes his vistories, which drew from thence the Duke of Longueville his forces; The battell Piccolomini wonne, which broke Weymars defignes, and his death which gave no time for the reundertaking of them, defended it.

The Kings Fleets which were in the Harbour of Cadiz, fet faile, one very powerfull towards Italy, commanded by the Duke of Naccara, and Maccheda, to be employed for the Common-wea th of Venice, if need required; the other commanded by Don Antorio di Ochendo, direitedits courfe towards the Ocean to fight with the French fhipps, and having fpent much time in putting, out into the Maine to come up with a farce wind to the Capes St. Vincent and Finifterre, fell juft upon the Groine. It came not into the Harbour but flayd onely till the fhipps under the command of Don-Lope de Ozes canse ont of it which though hee performed with all poffible celeritie, yet they could not coine fo foone, bue that the French fhips were retired into thei: own harbours.

## 224 The chiefe Events

A'molt at the fame time came his Majelties Army out of Perpignane, and the Fleet from the Groine; the rumour of the one made the Duke of $L_{\text {uin }}$ returne into France, and the reporr of the other cau.ed the Archbifhop of Burdeawx to forfake his place.

The coalt of Spaise being freed from the enemie, they undertnoke their voyage to carry the relie e into Flanders. Being come into the Chanel, they difcovered feventeen Holland fhipps. Don Antonso appointed his to goe on, and hee followed with the Admirall, but they ttaying, and he thrulting forwards, found himfelte alone in the front of the enemies, ivho had placed themfelves in form of a halfe moone for to deceive them. Hee defited to board their Admirall, which to attaine unto, he was, for almolt an houre,forced to be the aime of all their Thot, without anfivering with his, intending tomake ufe of it at the boarding. So foone as he ca ne neere, hee began to thoot, and when he thought to board, the enemy hoyfed up his Sailes and vent further off. The next day being ma de fronser by fixteen thips, he Chewed himfelfe

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 125

againe; There began the horriblett fight that ever was feene at Sea. The noife of fo many pieces of Ordnance hindered their hearing, and the fmozke their fight, that little as could be feen or heard, was rhe battering of Thips, tearing of failes, hivering of malts, the voyces of Commanders, and the groanes of dying men.

One of the Kings Ships and a Hulke inconfideratly, or ignorantly fraying from the reft, fell into the hands of the Hollanders reare-ward, Don Antonio went to refcue them, he refcued the Ship, but not the Hulke, finding it already taken by the enemie. The time being farre fpent, the Fleets tacked about to get the wind, and were parted, that of Generall Ochendo having faile $f$ within fight of the coalt of France, found it felfe neere the Englifh hore, where the fecureneffe of the Habcurs, the friendhip and peace between the two Kings, and finding his Admirals Thip evill intreated (having alone fought with fixteene hlips of the enemies) made him refolve to Anchor at the Downes, from whence hee fent over almnft all the reliefe to Mardick in fmall veffells, though the Hollander were in the

## 116 The chiefe Events

fame Harbour increafed in fhipping to the number of one hundred and fourteen.

The Spanifh Fleet feemed to lie there fecure, and was to be fo by the capitulation between the King of England, and the Catholick King. But the Hollander was not long before he undeceived the ivorld, (if there were any one in it fo fimple as to be deceived)by fetting upon his Majefties Fleet though the two Generalls of Spaine and Holland had both paffed their words to the Vice-Admirall of the King of England, that they would not offend one another, the Vice-Admirall being there, and threatning to fall upon them who fhould break their Covenarts.

A great boldneffe and prefumption in thofe Ports and harbours which are their Afylums and places of refuge, and a difhonour done by them to that King whofe Anceftors firft fet up their reputation.

But what dare not thofe peop'e doe ? They are pernicious to all men, and leffè to thofe to whom they moft feeme to bee fo, more powerfull in fratagems then valorous in ftrength, without God, without Law, without Faith; riends or enemies;

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 127

chey meafure all in one manner. They hateall that is not common-wealth, and lay fnares for any thirg that is a Principalitie. In one part tney fight againft a Monarch, and in another againtt Monarchie. They feeke to augment the one, and diminifh the other. In fome places they affault ftates, in fome the formes of them; And having bin affitted while they were rebells, they likewife affift rebellion. They are every where franing commonwealths, which they have ready framed in their minds, and goe about actually to fet them up. Part is, and part will be feen.
I hold France to be no Monarchie, it is halfe a Common-wealth; ifnot a!l, it will be : it is no matter though Hereticks poffeffe no Cities there. Walls make not the forme of a ftate, but lawes; which on the one part grant them liberty of confcience. and perfwade it their bodies on the other. If it be faid they are difperfed, it is fo much the worfe, they worke the more and lie ciofer hidden; a fauit not common to great and fmall things, but peculiar-to facious Kingdomes in which great evills are nourifhed:they lie hidden, and are not knowne

## 128 <br> The chiefe Events

untill they be palt remedie. So bodies of ftrong complexions beare great defeits, and when they can no longer beare them, they cannot cure them, having employed all their ftrength not iu correcting but entertaining them : being entertained they grow, growen they overflow, and nor corrected, they kill. Evills that they may not grow, mult be hindered, and good thingsthat ihey may not decreafe, need help, Mixed together if the one be not affifted and the cther hindered, they unite in a body fo corrupt, that it admits no cure neither of tteele nor fire.

I would be deceived. Bur I feare it. becaufe I have nct bin deceived in forefeeing the like cafes; whofoever hath feene my writinos fome few ycares fince knoweth it. This is not boalting, bùt zeale, not to gaine glory, but credic with them to whom it may doe good if 1 gaine it.

I take on my cpurfe, having digreffed for cthers fakes that they may get out of laberinths, Don Antonio Ochyendo fin. ding hinfelfe forced to fight, came cur of the harbour. One and tiventy of his Mips followed

## in the Spanifh Moxarchy. 129

followed him, the relt (I know not the caufe ) peradventure they were out of order, but ftaying behind, at laft ran on ground molt of them.

There began a cruell fight, and though the enemy had a great advantage(having one hundred and fourteen Chips to one and twenty )yet the Hollander continually fhunned the aboard; The Admiralls thip wherein were the Generall Ocbesdo, and Michael d'Orno Admirall, was encompaffed with a multitude of fhips, and fo was the Terefia commanded by Generall Don Lope de Ozes: But they all fought generoufly. The enemy plied them with Ordnance to finke them, and with fire fhips to burne them, they had their purpofe in the Terefia, which irrecoverably perifhed in flames, with fo much Ordnance, fo many men, and (which is mott of all) with fo great a Noble mant Ochendo thcugh he much endeavoured to come at it, could not refcue it. They fought fiercely for many hours. Night parted them, leaving fix fips in the enemies hands, and they having lolt above twenty. Don Axtonio was comming for the coalt of Spaine, but the wind turning,
he was forced to put into the Haven of Mardick, onely with the Admirall of Drukirk, and feven orher Thips, the fight and tempelt having fevered him from the reft.
This was therent the Kings Fleet had. Which having fer daile to drive alvay the French from the coalt of Spaine, and to carry reliefe into Flanders, performed both. And fighting with fach difadvanrage, womne more then it loft. Victories being not meafured by the loffes in a mighty Monarch who wants no mony; But onely by the olory, which confilts, in obtaining his end, and the meanes of obtaining it.

In Italy the moft Chriftian Kings Officers (under the name of the Dutcheffe o? Savoy ) propounded a Truce, making the world believe they didit to pleafe the Princeffes womanifh humours, that the might not yoe live in France, nor give over commanding in Italie.
Their ends were becaufe they would nor feeme to grow weake, nor breed any Fufpicion, thinking under colour of her to cover their defignes, and falve their reputations. But a!l was perceived and known,

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. I3I

knowne, and the French themfelves could not conceale it, no mans brealt being valt enough to hide fuch a great defire.

They fought to better the bufineffe, by propounding a Peace in Italie, and make it the eafier, by propounding a generall one. They asked whither the Kings Officers had any authoritie to treat of ir, and being anfwered yea, they asked time untill they might fend for the like : and did all things, with indirest, various, doubtfull and confufed meanes, fo that they cauled every one to imagine they meant to deceive.
The Marquis of Leganes called a Councell of the chiefe Commanders, to dirculie the buineffe, and found them almolt all. for a Truce.

They alleaged that Truces were alwaies profitable to them who were in poffeffion, and efpecially for fuch as were in danger of lofing. That his Majefties Army diminifhed and would daily grow leffer, even to fuch a propartion, that it would farce beare the name of an Army. That thofe souldiers which had efcaped the Sword and fickneffe, were fo tired with continuall lying in the field, and weakened

## 132 The chiefe Events

weakened with continuall fufferings, that they were not able to labour any longet. That folder began to grow very fcarce, and it might be imagined within a while it wonld quite faile: And if they fhon!d beforced to a retrear, how fhould they doe it (between two Rivers) without lofing themielves?

That hope of Supplies diminifhed every day, there being warres in all places: fo that they were onely to reckon upon thole they had there, which were few and unferviceable. That the enemy fupsriour in ltrength, with daily fupplies comming out of France, found himfelfe numerous in frefh Souldiers, who were able to endure hardneffe, having yet endured none; Provifion they had more then enough, having fo much land behind them. The attempting any thing againlt him was impoffible, to defend every thing from him difficu't, hindering him from relieving the Cittadel of Turin, palt hope, to fet againtt him openly a madneffe. The enterprife would bee made everlafting and impoffible, and not without danger of lofing the City, in lteed of taking the Cittadell, if fo be the enemy more nume-

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. I 33

rous, and better fortified fhould go about to affau't it. That he wanted not recruits, there comming every day freh to him out of $F_{\text {rasce }}$, and expecting greater daily.

The Truce would give time to fortifie our felves within Turin againft ths Cittadell, which being a great IVorke, could not be done in few daies, and with a few foike, that our men being once fecured, we might thinke upon the befieging of it. In the meane time our Souldiers might recover their health, and refrefh themCelves. The French would walte, and his heat of fighting being abated by the Truce, he would leave his Colours and returne into France as hee ufed to doe. And in care he thould goe into Burgusdie, he might be followed.

There was no need to feare making a Truce, much to refufe it. Our Army not oo be in fate of gaining any thing in fo mall a time, and yet that little, was fuffi--ient to lecure that which was gotter

That ceafing from hoftility, did ufually give way to difcourfes, and difcourfes to Treaties of peace. A truce would apगeafe and coole mens hearts, and being fo calmed,

## 134 <br> The chiefe Everts

calmed, many times fuch things were concluded, as they would not fo much as heare fpoken of when they were heated. That we might when the Truce was ended, if the Treaties proved vaine, and we found it not good to confirme it, againe begin warre with more advantage.

Some who held the contrary faid, that all the reafons the Spaniards urged to make a Truce, were grounded onely upon likelihoods and conveniencie. But the French propofing it with lofe of reputation, feemed to yield. That their nature was knowne to bee fuch, that they never would defire fuch ends, but when they were fo ftreightened, that they could doe no otherwife, wherefore they might be thought to doe it through necelfitie. And therefore there would bee as much inequality init, as there is between conveniercie an Ineceffitie.

The profit and advantage of the ons fide, in warre was not to bee meaturec fimply in it felfe, but with relation to the other fide whence groweth the littleneffs or the greatneffe of it. A man is visto:i ous that kills his enemy in fingle duell though hereceives many wounds.

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 135

The enemy who proporeth a thing, bee it what enemy it will, alwayes gives occafion of fulpecting it to be evill: if hee be a French main, it is affuredly fo .

That the reafons alleaged for our fide, were in the realitic, nor in the underftanding onely, fo cleere and manifett, that eicher they were falfe, or if true, know to the enemy. And that thofe of the contrary part, (if they might bee known to us) were fo weake and hallow, that they would not counterpoife ours, if true. And therefore wee mult imagine the one to be made greater by a vaine feare, and the other ltrengthened by fome lecret defigne, which ought alvaies to be reputed grear, it being knowne that there is one, but not what it is.

That Princes and Common-wealths may know what is good or evill for them, by meafuring it with their interefts, and the ftates which they poffeffeA Governour of Milan his intereft lieth a great way off from the State and he ought to be governed by that which hee doth not governe. To undertake great affaires, be it to move difcord or warre, or to conclude Peace or Truce, he ought

## 136

The chiefe Events
to have the confent of Spaine. And hee that thould doe otherwife, might bee thoug'x worthy of punithment by reafon of the great danger in which he might at any time put the Monarchie by not certifying concerning it.

That the enemy may plot to affault Burgundie, fet upon Flanders, not be divetted out of Spaine, and fecure Alfatia. Burgundy known to be unprovided. Flanders with fmall power to defend it feife. Spaine with the loffe of one place eafilyl refcued. Alfatia by the death of Weymar recoverable. To make a Truce at this time, might be called letting loofe the $\epsilon-$ nemy who was called thither, and their chained, conquered \& deje:ted to th'end he may runne where fortune is more favourab!e to him and the warre eafier to encreafe his vi太tories.
If the rruce be becaufe we want frength, how fhall we keepe him back if he be going into Burgundie ? it will be harder to follow hirn out of Italie, then to conquer him in Piemont.

The Cittadell of Turin, if we fhould make a truce for feventy dayes, could not be befieged till the fpring, that it was fulficiently

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. ${ }^{2} 7$

ufficiently befer for what cou'd be done to it for the prefent, and we had time enough to provide againft the future.

If we abounded not in provifions, the enemy was likewife very fcarce of them; if our Army grew weake, the French grew to nothing, being fubjeit to the fame difeafes, and wanting that patience to endure ; apter to runne alvay, and having more oppcrtunitie to doe it.

It is not to be denied but that Truces are good for them who are in poffeffion, if they bemade for a long time, and thofe who are in poffeffion pretend to keepe that which they have conquered; and wanting for that purpole fulficient trrength and juft titles, feeke to have their ftrength encreafed, and make their title ju!t by prolonging of ume.

The Marçuis of Legases not content with the opinions ot thofe Commanders who were prefent and almolt all inclining to a truce ; did likewife by letters give his Majeflies chiefe Counfellors notice of it, in whom finding no contradiction, he alio finding it necefary : concluded it for feaventy dayes. They framed articles (which are inferted

## 138 . The chiefe Events

at the end of the booke, becaufe wee would not interrupt the conrle of the hiftory) and they who figned them on the one part were Prince Thomsar, and the Marguis of Leganes; On the other part the Cardinall of Valette and the Duke of Longueville, in the name of the Dutcheffe alfo, promifing that within the limited time the fhould ratifie them.

The French kept not the truce, and the Dutcheffe did not accept of it. The one becaufe they tooke many places, which betore they had not; and fhe becaute fhe did not ratifie it, according to their promife.

The Marquis of Leganes found himielfe obliged to hinder th'exchange of fix hundredifouldiers in Cafal. The Cardinall of Richiliew heard of is and writ hima letter which in few lines, with great art, cor.tained many, but weake, realons. He praifed the Marquis, to gaine his good ivill. Made fhew as if he believed not, that the exchange was hindered by order from him. He vindicated the Dutcheffe in that particular of not prefendy ratifying, faying it was fufficient that it was done, and that it was nobreach of trace

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. $\quad 139$

being fent fo foon as itwas certified that it was not receaved. Concerning the exchange of the garrifons of Sufa and $A$ vigliana, he interpreted the articles as though they did not any way hinder it. He confirmed hirs reafon by an argumet t taken a Jimile from the like cale, viz. by what was done by the Spaniard in Nizxa, and confirmed it with another argument taken a majori, viz. That the decree made at Trin againtt the Dutcheffe was of a nature guite different, making by it one order againft the other. Finally when he had interlaced the letter with many faire wayes of periwafion, at the laft heinferted odious wayes of threathings, mitigated with a pleafing kind of infinuating them, hewing rather then threarning what dammages might befall them who did not obierve the covenants.
On the other fide the Marquis had many reaions to lay down wherfore though be were as courteous in the manner of doing it, he could nor be fo briefe in his exprelfions. He thanked his eminencie for the commendations he gave him and more for the good opinion he had of his 1i!!! - G 2 Majefties

Majefties Officers; That if his gentlenefle deceived him in the one, in the other he thewed his underltanding.

That he was glad to have to doe with fo eminent an Offiter, and of fo great worth, in the difcuffing of this cale, who would earily be capable of underftanding the truth; That the Durcheffe ratification was promifed within a limited time, and the Contrait was voided by the not having received it wit lin the time limited, though it were made, and not required, and much more, it not being made, Shee ftaying (as it was faid) for order from the molt Chriltian King, and they having (as it was knowne) demanded it. That this claufe, not accompilithed, excluded her highneffe out of the Treaty; and the King of Prance being included therein, it fevered him from his Sitters interefts; Shewing that his Majefties Officers alfo had therein committed a default, by not withdrawing their Forces out of fuch places where they were einploye 1 in her Highneffe fervice ; becaufe the Truce concuded in Italy with the King of Spaine, did not admit of the fecuring any of his enemies places:whence

$$
\text { in the Spanifb Monarcby. } 14 \mathrm{I}
$$

might be perceived how much they had gone beyond that which was agreed upon, by entering into Sufa, Avigliano, and Canor: as if it were the fame thi $g$ to exchange a Garrifon, and to take potlelfion of a new one; to leave the ftate of thirgs as it was, and to better it by the gaining of three places. An act fo farre from what was agreed upon, that though the Dutchefle had ratified ene contratt, and made of two parties one, it could not choofe but be a manifelt breach. He marvelled not, that his, Eminency had fpoken nothing of Canor, for having neither reafon; likelihood, nor thew to defend the feizing uponit, he would take no notice of the doing it, feeing the Governour thereof had immediatly before the Truce by a Letter fubferibed with his Captaines hands. made an acknowledgement of ir, to be the Princes Cardinall and Thomas. That which his Eminencie infifted upon of the like done by us, by bringing in Garrifons, where thofe of Piemont were; Ivas not as yet done. And if it had, it would have been a thing very different. The King his Mafter with the Princes, being but one party, whereas the King of

France, and the Dutcheffe were two. That it was true Nizza,had changed Lord, but many dayes before the Truce. But the French had bettered themfelves in their Workes under the Caltle of Villa Franca, againtt and fince the capitulation; That the Decree publifhed in Turim, was no act of holtilitie, of policie it was granted, and that if it were of hoftilitie, it might bee done againft the Dutcheffe, already excluded from the fufpenfion of Armes; That his Eminencie might know that the Spanifh officers had obferved the Truce, as if it had been ratified; And that the moft Chriltian Kings Officers had broken it, though it had been ratified. And howfoever that the want of the ratification did debarre the moft fophifticall underftandings, from queftioning the defects of the one part, and the fu'tilties of the other.

His Eminencie muft excufe him if hee did not fatisfie his reguelt, and that hee could not remedie the inconveniencies, or underfand them otherwife, but that he mult hinder the exchange of the fixe hundred Souldiers from Cafal. Nor would he doe it, if the Dutcheffe would ratifie,

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 143

ratifie, and the King of France defert thofe places, which his Officers had taken; not binding them with fo much sigour, but that they might yet have fo many dayes after the truce, to amend what was palt.

The Marquis concluded his Letter which was full of the Cardinalls praifes, with proffers, and thankes; I have herein, trulting to the Readers capacitie, not fo farre enlarged the reafons, nor unfolded them with fo much fpirit, as the Marquis did write them. Yet I have not added any thing of mine owne, nor taken away any thing of the fubftance.

In the meane time the Fort of Salfas in Spaine, was fet upon in foure places; In the moft dangerous place wrought the Count Dukes Regiment commanded by the Marguis of Mortara, and Lobw doArza. There th'enemy made out trenches, fallied, fprung Mines, leaving nothing anattempted to hinder the defigne; but all in vaine. When he fallied, he was driven in fometimes by the one Commander, fometimes by another, fill with excellent valour, and by both of them firft beaten into the out Dikes, and after-

## 144 <br> The chiefe Events

wards from themce diflodged, giving our men thereby leave to advance, which they valiantly did. The Governour with great care and warchfullneffe giving every one way to obtaine reputation.

The enemy was clofely befieged, without any more hopes of fallying out ; the Count Dakes Regiment being gotten within the Dike, clofe to the wall to undermine it. The great fall of raine hindered the worke for a time: then the report of the enemies comming on to relieve it, caufed it to be intermitted, and at lalt was quite given over through a deceitfull report, or relation of deceived men ; For fome being runne cut of the Fort or at lealt diffembling as though they had forfaken it, faid there was not provifion within to maintaine it for a weeke, and that the Souldiers died for hunger. They fhewed fome of the Bifket mouldy and finking, and added fo many circumftances, that the Captaines tooke the newes for certaine, And to avoid the fhedding of blood about a place of no great importance, and becaufe of the incommodities of rainie and cold weather, the intemperatneffe of the aire

## in the Spanifh Monarsby. . $145^{\circ}$

which cauted diteales in men, and the necelficy of fortifying our felves againft the approching reliefe; they determined to lie itill, till famine caufed it to yeeld, feeingby force it was not to bee wonne in leffer time. The terme of many dayes being fpent, and no yeelding fpoken of it was attributed to the Governours obflinacie, never perceiving the deceit. And one weeke paffing away after ancther, the enemy within, and without, fill mairtaining the report of the famine, it was a'ivaies judgedill done that they had not' fet upon it by force; and it was now thoug't it could never be taken. Every day tome precedent error was blamed, and fome new one $c$ mantted; lofing. time through th'opimon of having lolt ito.

I doe not affirme there was any error comritted, but if there were, it may bee called a molt tortunate one: it tlayd mat the Conyueft folong, as it increafed the glory of it taking away from the enemy all manner of excufe, for coveringhis defeits, even of time.:

Leaving men en won befiege the place clofe, they began to calt up ortworkes

## 246 <br> The chiefe Events

and though they were large, they brought them to that perfection that there might be fome hope of defending them.

All this worke, which caufed the effect of the enterprife, muft be attributed to the Count Drke, who whileft the Generalls writ fometimes of impoffibilities, fometimes of difficulties, with effectuall Letters, fhewing them it was not impoffible, relieving them with men, engaged them to goe on with the work, and made it fo eafie, that in the end of the Siege it was almoft inpregnable.

In Flanders the King of France his Army being divided in two parts, one under the command of the Marihall of Chatiglion the other of Migliare, the Cardinall Infanta oppofed the firlt with Piccolomins, and the other with the Marguis of Fuentes. Few paffages happened on either fide. the King of France being drawne into Italie by tue Marçuis of Léganes his proceedings,and Piccolomini into Germanie by Baniers.

The greateft matter the French attempted, war, after they had raced the Fort of Rbuminghens, and in vaine affaulted Rovignes, to feeke to paffe the

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 147

river, Don Asdrea fet forward with three hundred Mufyuetriers, to view them. The Enemy endeavouaed to cuit him off: The skirmifh began very hot, \& growing on by degrees, the Marguis was enforced to engage his whole body. They foüght Pike to Pike, and Sword to Sword with fo much valour, that the enemy loit a thoufand men, the Spaniard loft tivo hundred and fiftie men, counting the kill'd, wounded, and prifoners. The Marguis of Fsentes obtained the renowne of a brave Commander, having with two Terciaes onely, oppofed the French Army, and hindered their great defignes, and alfo of a valiant fcu!dier, having with his owne hand taken prifoners, wounded and flaine many of thenemies. What the Prince of Orange did this yeare, I will fpeake in few words, and all at once, for it was almolt nothing. if it be not thought much to have diverted and kept idle fo many forces of his Majefties. and to obferve their movings. Hee defired to take the paffe of Gaunt, but the Count of Fera his vigilancie did frultrate his intentions: Hee fortified himfelfe a bout the Pbis lippines; and :befiegel Goldero.r The

Cardinal

## 148 The chiefe Events

Cardinall $7 x f$ ante who drew neare with the Army, caufed him to retire in the night, not without confulfion and loffe of men. He faced Rbinebergh, and fought to lie before $H a r f t$, but becaufe Van Namen was beaten back when he went to let his men a fhore, and Count Fontana happened to be thereabouts with the Kings Army,and the Cardinall Infante drawing apace that way, he refolved to give over the enterprife.
Thefe were the Hollanders (I know not whether I hould fay)motions, or defires, when the King of France pricked them forward to undertake fome notable enterprife.

I cannotenter into the'e mens policy: it may be beyond mine underftanding, or it may erre. Compofers of a fable, movers of engines, fee:tators of a tragedie, the end whereof (it it be dolefull) may be the beginning of theirs. It he overcomes who was their Lord they will be as they were; if he that is their companion, they make themfelves as they dufire. He that hath not thought it a fhame to forfake rhem in time of peace to fertle his Crowne upon his head, will not

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 149

be fcrupulous, being a conquercur to fubjeit. them to enlarge it. To fay that thefe two foveraignes powers are counterpoiled, that they wafte, and not end, that they will both loie, and neither overcome : that being a:flicted and wearie, they will be brought to a good peace; in which looking narrowly to their owne reputation, the good of their confederates will be well provided for, would be a good the ught it the fuppofition were not incertaine and the confequence falfe, if War were alwaies ended with peace,st not fometimes with conquelt, if armes were laid downe, and Warres maintained with the fame palfions; if experience had not fhewen the contrary, and reafon demonftrated it. Rage and hatred being cea ed or abated the fcene is altered before the eyes of the principall parties. Being at peace with his enemy, he confidereth his companion, who hath incited him to Warre, helped, that he right be confumed, bindered, that he might not overcome falie lying and deceit ull, and leemeth the more to have bin an enemy, becaufe he fhould have bin a friend, and was nor. The turmoi'e by realon of which

## 150 The cbiefe Events

which the heat of emulation could not be a voided, Or the hope of great conquelts: The former being now quenched, and the latter loft, are now examined, and proves a vexation A nd being boren withall whillt the Warre latted, is now revenged (when peace is concluded; the defire whereof comes not, withcut hatred of that which caufed the other. He that layeth downe armes and hath gotten nothing, thinketh he hath confumed his money and men, in the fervice of his confederates, and comming to make peace feeketh to repaire his loffe with their dammage, counterpoing it with the profit which he pretends he hath received. The caufe which bindeth two enemies to come to agreement, who have bin fo obitinate in Warre, and growen old in emulation is alwayes fo powerfull, that it fuffers them not againe to renew fuch an appearance, more like then convenience, to not give an example to pofterity; and efpecially when at orher times it hath bin given, and hath donehurt. Either they mult acceminodate themfelves to others wills, or War with teir owne powers.

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 15 I

But if through the vistories of either of the two Monarchies, dangers hang over their heads, by peace they receive dammage, by Warre profit, why doe they not, before this eafe, or that begin, ftay the wheele of fortune, and accommodate themfelves with their Lord, who to overcome his competitor with a glorious yittory, or bind him to an honourab'e peace, would peradventure yield to that, which at any other time he would deny? Who is a better neighbour, he that is a borderer upon them with all his power, or he that doch it, but with a fmall part. He whom they have known to governe in time of peace without tyrannizing, intime of trouble fight without fubjerting them, in time of truce helpe by inviting them. Or he who in time of peace was alwayes an enemy, in Warres, fometimes hath comforted, fometimes forfaken them, and at no time ever fufficiently affifted them, looking upon nothing but his owne proper intereft, and conveniency, that never joines with them, but when it doth them hurt.

Surely I write as I conceive it to be; I have no recourfe to Metaphyficks, nor
ufe any art but thinke to write the truth, plainly and fincerely, and etcher love deceives me, or hatred blinds them.

Under Salfas Spinola found greater refiftance in the enemy, then many imagined, and in our men leffe contancie. The country people began to retire home, to avoid the falling waters and the unwholefomneffe of the aire ; whereunto adding the neceffary retreat of many fick and wounded men, the dearth of fodder, and the doubrfull provifion of food, the Army was fo decreafed, that he was forced to reprefent unto his Majeltie, the danger of forfaking the fiege, or the neceffitie of being re.ieved with Souldiers, munition labourers; and provifion.

The letters were read in the Iunta oi State and War, and newes being brought that the Duke of Maccheda, and Don charles d'Suarra were arrived in Catalonia with the other Fleet ; the landing of thofe forces, was thought the onely remedy for to gaine Salfas.

Nor could the promife which was made of it to the Vinetians, be any obAacle, teeing the Turke was not knowne

## in the Sparifb Morarchy. 153

to ftirre any way And when a mans owne houfe is on tre, a wife man will not carry his water to quench anothers. The Venetians would not blame ir, the world would find no fault withit, and his owne fubje?ts would commend it. To this confultation the King made anfwer, that they fhould not thinke upon the Fleet, he had engaged his word to the Ambaffadour Contarini, to fend it into Italie to be at the difpofall of that com -mon-wea'th, and he would not faile therein by any meanes. His Majefties intent was either to affif it in its breaches by employing his forces, or further its accommodations by fhewing hee would have employed them. He flighted the dammages she himfelfe received, rouching his reputation with a competitor, in refpect of thofe a confederate common-wealth might receive in its dominions by the hands of Gods enemies, and preferred her fervice to his owne; With the lawes of friend/hip he overcame the Charpeneffe and provocations of emulation which is moft porverfull in operation, inmifleading mens hearts. He laid afide th' affection of a
competitor, which is alwayes greatelt in greatelt men, and fhewed he was not void of that of friendhip, which ufually taketh root in none but the meaner fort. The one was occafioned by the greatneffe of mind, and State, which adnits of no competitor, the other by the fincerity of the heart which never deceives, nor forfakes a friend. This King hath (a thing which peradventure is not in other men.) all the qualities which are reguired for the compleating of a Gentleman, without hurting thereby them which make a King great. He hath recalled from banifhment the morall vertues, and hath placed them amid'ft thrones, and fcep. ters, which vertues had bin expelled, not by the reafons, but the vices of Politicians. Shewing that they which belong to a Prince, and to a private man are the fame; and if there be any difference, it is not in the kind or fpecies of them, but in the fuperiority of quality, converting them cut of private into Royall ones, and praitifing them as King.

Who would have bin fo fincere in this corrupt age? in which (peradventure through meere emulation) we hate our mothers

## in the Sparifh Morarchy. 155.

mothers, fight with our brethren, forfake our Silters, perfecute our Kindred, and abandon our friends. Or who hath done the like in better ages?

It is much that this King though he were bred up in good cultomes, hath not fuffered himfelfe to be carred away by an evill ones, by time nor example, and that he is fo. pious, when it might be pietie enough in him, to not be impious. But he can pretend no excufe, from any fuch imitation, or cime, from which his tertues have alwayes kept him. And he: ought alivayes to Thew himelfe as different frommens aitions, as he hath bin from their vices.

Theftrist and continuall inftances of Marquis Spinola, and the feeming impoffibility of remedying all wants, feemed to incline and almof force the minds of many to raiferthe fiege.
The Count Duke who amidlt other mens hopes, had not voted that $S_{\text {alf }}$ as fhould be befieged, in their defpaire would not fuffer it to be given over. He thought it a fmall conqueft to take it, and a great loffe to not take it after it was befieged. He durit not with his

vote

## 156 <br> The chiefe Events

vote endanger his Lords reputation, but it beino endangered by others, hee was with his valour bound to fecure it. The difficulties were many, each one in it felf great, and all laid together, feemed impoffible to be overcome.

But what cannot a fubject of eminent underttanding doe, having great power, and that iniuled into him by a great Monarch? He can doe whar hee will, a:Id it is no marvell if another knoweth not what he can doe, fince hee himfelfe doth not know it, before he hath tried it.

Who feareth dammage from fuch kind of men, erres fo much the more, the more he engageth them in great affaires; They performe alwayes the greatelt, becaufe they are greater then any thing they undertake. The wife man hath no certaine bound, he groweth with thoocafions, encreaferh with operating and like Powder, gaines force by receiving it.

What one onely man may availe the greatneffe of a Monarchie, hath not as yet been tried, as now adaies. Or hath norbeen known, either becaufe he hath nor been eminent, or becaufe he hath not

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 157

been fo alone. So many fubjeits,famous, and worthy of re!pect, bothin peace and warre, dying within few yeares, might have prognofticated fome unhappy events, to thefe moft happie ftates, the Lord being wont, when hee will ruine a Country, to take away fuch perfons as may fuftaine it; if it were not that hee doth it alfo when he will make fome one fubjects worth apparent and profitable, by taking away fuch, as with their credit might ufurpe his glories, or hinder them by their competition.

The Venetuans who knew by experience, that to ftay the courfe of a barbarous horfe, a golden bit was better then an iron one : after they had with great preparations valoroufly fhowne, they feared not warre; wifely bought their peace, and obtained it. good and honourable. Whereby the King being freed from his promife, gave the Fleet order, to fend nen, inftruments, gunners, and what els they could to the reliefe of the Army ander Salfas.

- The greatelt and molt difficult bufineffe was the ivant of provifions, and epecially of fodler. From the neighbour

Ccuntries

## 156 <br> The chiefe Ervents

Countries, it could not be expeited, feeing they were poiled; burned, and wafted. And to have them brought out of other Kingdomes, the diftance of place, the leafon of the yeare, it being Auturnne, the foulneffe of the weather, and the fuddenneffe which the urgent neceffity required, made it almolt impoflible to be done by any humane diligence. But the Count Duke, with the greameffe of his undertanding found a remedie for it; and effeeted it with fo much celeritie, that within few dayes the A rmy was abounding in provifions and fodder. He was not content to provide for them one way, hee appointed them to come out of Sardinia, Arragon, and CMajora, and they came from all thefe places; Hee knew there was no way to fecure hard enterprifes. but to provide therein abundantly, and that errors may happen without reviving. And fo thofe rhings at laft proved eafie, which feemed impoffible.

To provide in a Country totally ruined, for a numerous Army, not comperencie, but abundance of provifions, and efpecially of fodder, from far Kingdomes, in rhe end of a rainie Aurume, nor by a

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. $\quad 157$

former determination, but by a fuddenly changed refolution, taken in an inftant, in the ftraitnefle of rime, whien delay of few dayes might have loft both the defigne and the Army, when it feemed impoffible that letters fhould returne foone enough by Polts, and much more provifions, is fuch a cafe, as is certainly unexampled in former ages, and muft paffe unimitated to enfuing times, requiring for the performance of it. many things whereof each one of it felfe is fingular, and altogether neceffarie. Great power, an eminent underfatiding, a worthy brelt, and extraordinary aifivity. Which gualities cannot come together, if there be not a Monarch refolure incommanding, a fupreme Officer full of ifpirit, watchfull Officers to put in execurion, and molt obedient fubjeas to not difturb thetn.

When an enensy brings one into Areights, it makes him know what may be done; Many times becaufe it increafeth the underftanding, and for the moft part, becaufe it leaves a man to his free willitaking away the power of Law with that of neeefritie. In engaging bee difn-
gageth, in raifing difficulties hee makes them ealie, changing juft things into unjult and making that neceffary which was but convenient.

Nature, be it flow, wife, or fparing, delayeth her uttermof endeavours, for the lalt violent affaults ; True it is, that referving it feife to be able to doe it, it often dies without doing it, and oft-times becaufe it hath not done it. One ought not to runne upon conquefts every time as one may.

In the execution of thele orders which were the foule of the enterprife of Saljas, it is fitting to ipeake with honour of the vigilancie and care of Dos Hierome of Villamova, Protonotaric of Arragon, a mott qualified Officer, acute of under(tanding, quick in executing,great in intelligences, and molt faithfull in his fervices. To have great defignes come to a good end, it is enough if hee undertakes them, lofing one hope he defpaires not, and never for$\sqrt{2}$ king the bufineffe, either he attaines to it by valour, or tireth it with diligence, and alway overcommeth it.

This Hold which Marquis Spinola befieged againtt his will, being ledd unto it

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 161

by chances, engaged in it byfortune, kepr there through obedience, he wonne not onely by great valour, gallantneffe and vigilancy (qualities by which men ufe to winne fuch holds ) but alfo by diffidencie, whicin ordinarily lofeth them. He did as much as a Generall could doe to bring an enterprife to paffe; and writ as much as an officer could, to defert it, fometimes theiving a defire to raife the fiege, and almoft ftill giving occafion to be commanded to continue it.

This way, which gon about by a dejested mind, would have ruined the enterprife, being undertaken by a high fpirit, fecured it. The Count Drke was not daunted, like one that had no heart, nor grew not obftinat, like thofe that have no braine. Conftancy engaged him to find a remedy for diffilencie, and he ftood not to difpute the matter with reafons, but went on n ) overcome dilficu ties with providing money, ammunition, provifion, and men ; and the feemirgneffe of want to be greater then it was, became the caufe of having the concuett by a meanes thought impoffible.

The eminency of underftanding cau-

## 162 The chiefe Events

lech a man to be fearfull, and a great heart to be raft, where they are equall they oppofe one another to get the congueft, the braine would in imidate the breaft, and the brealt would make the braine valiant. From that conflict comes forth a mixt, which is not feare, but confideration ; and there they two being quaifyed, leave off the contention betweene themfelves, and with one accord fer upon the difficulties, the breaft will not yeeld to them, the braine will overcome them; and whereas feverall they might have loft, the one being abjeft and fearefull, the other obltinate and rafh, being united they overcome with conftancie and providence.

I know not whether next to God and the King the glory of the enterprife be due to the Count Duke; but I know he gave it knowledge power, will, and accomplifhment, giving them order they Dhould not give off the fiege, teaching them how to fecure it, providing for the maintenance of it and with fo much abundance that it might be overcome.

The Cavallerie lay idte under Salfas. There came Inteiigence that the enemy
had laidup in a Caftle in Frasce fodder, and victuall, and had not left a fufficient guard to detend it from a fodaine affault. The Generalls with the advice of other commanders refolved to fend Duke St. George with eight hundred horfe and five hundred marquettiers to fire it. The enterprije feemed to be bald, and painefull, as grounded onely upon doubtfull and unlikely advices.

The Duke fer forward, and by the way met with a body of Cavallery more numerous then his owne ftanding in a readineffe, whether it were there before, or by chance, or upon notice given. This unexpected accident, forced him to alter his mind, but rot his valour nor wifedome, and made him refolve to alter his fire into ftee e, and conquer where he could not burn. ide fent th' Infantrie to take the paffes to make his retreate good in cafehe fhould difoover more orces, and he with his Cavallery went to charge thofe horle which were in fight, he routed and put them to flight, flew them, and tooke but few prifoners becaure he would not trouble himfelfe, and fo returned vistorious to the Camp,

## 164 The chiefe Events

This Cavalier is fonne to the Marquis of Torrecxfa; his ations which fpeake for him, fhew his father to be not onely valiant in fighting but alfo happy in begetring of children ; Leaving it doubtfull in what forrune hath molt fubjected him to envy, either in what he hath performed, or in that he hath begotten.
The King of Erance his Army confitting of twenty thourand horfe and foot, thewed it felf entrenched upon a little hill, with rome few fquadrons defcending into the plaine, viewed the outward workes, to relieve the Place. Marguis Spixola had difpofed all things with watchfull prudency, feareleffely expesting ch' affault. A troope of horfe about midnight endeavoured to come neere
 and yeelding by reafon of the great quantitie of raine water engaged fome to forlake their horfes, which were fallen and mired there, and the reft to retreate. A thunder bole fell in the mid'lt of them the noife gave alarme to the trenches. The night was darke, tempeftuous and rainy. His Majefties army tond impatient, and defirous to fight. Having laid

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 163

afide their mulguets as unprofitable, they expeited their enemy with pike and fivord, when a light defcended upon them, which fhewed the points of their armes brigit in proportion of a farre. Whether it was naturall, as well it might be, \& fig: i ied the clearing up of the aire; or fupernaturall; which may be belieyed in a caute fo juft, and fhewed heaven to be favourable to us. But whether it indeed proceeded from a heavenly, or ethereall, knowne, or unknowne beginning, it was a light, and every one faw it.

The Walloones whofe fortifications the enemy threatned, after much filence, gave a great hout.
In doubtfull cafes every thing is great. There is no meane betweene filence, and Thouting. The firits which in danger ru ne to the heart, cannot move the tongue, and there is filence. If need require to advantage our felves by uttering our voice, being all heaped up in a vitall part, they runne with fuch violence to the organs of feaking, that they muit needs frame a great found. The enemy had a great number of forced, and new men, who beng alrea dy fearfull of their

## 166i . The chiefe Events

owne nature, and dejected by reafon of the waters which inceffantly powred downe, terrified and amazed, with the light armes, and Thouting, as if the thunder and lightning had followed thema fled away; the valianteft lought to ltay them, and when they found that to be in vaine, they likewile retired and Hed confufedly. Their tents, armes, waggons of ammunition and viftuall were left behind for a prey. It feemes that thefe new forced and bafe men are good for nothing but to encreafe the number, and with the number, difficulty to maintaine an army; an engagement to fight, with thame if they be overcome, a hinderance to conqueft, and confufion in retreating. They prevent danger with their flight, and neyer ftay for it ; where')y others are affrighted and follow them, or endeavour to ftay them, and are difordered. If they did but flay for th'incounter; and a little oppore the enemy, they wou'd be good for fomething. And it is hard if the one part be net routed through the others diforder, For they will follow them that flye, and they that flye being difordered, they who follow mult needs imitate them,

## in the Spanifh Monarcloy. 167

them : fo that by the flight of the bafer fort, one may rout the moit valorous, and being wearied and difordered flay them.

But experience having fo often ohewed the burt they doe, when the bufineffe hath come to a triall, it feemeth Arange to me, that at the inttant when one goeth to fight, they will fill up Armies with fuch kind of folke. I know not whether mans vanity ought to be blamed for this error, which habituated more in Thew then fubttance, and accuftomed to gaine thereby, cannot (though it do him hurt) recede from that habitude, or ignorance, which erring in the manner offraming an argument, concludes that cowards mixed amonoft valiant men will gaine valour, whereas it fhculd rather be inferred, that valiant men mixed amonglt cowards, will lofe their valour. Peradventure alfo it is neither vanitie nor ignorance, but a fecret providence of human nature. The great number, if they doe not come to triall, availeth much, and efpecially to avoid the triall : a thing which nature above all things defireth, when it makes the lealt Niex of
defiring it. It loves not to come to triall of the arme, and to thatend it uferh all kind of meanes, fometimes multitudes which fhall be either fantalticall or fruitleffe. Sometimes the quality of their out-fides, long haire, guilded armes, humorous apparell, fearfes, and feathers. Sometimes the noife of horrid outcries, threatning death, or a deepe filence reprefenting it. Sometimes a motion, which being violent may make one runne away, or forget to offend.

There came newes into the Leaguer, that the enemy had an intent to attempt the relieving of the place by water, and by land, both at one time, and to that end had armed at Leucata cerrainBrigandines, and great Itore of Boates, with men and muntion, defended by a great Trench guarded with Mufquettiers. It was judged fitting to fire them. The firlt attempt tooke no effe? for it being to bee done by night, our men loft their way. The fecond time taking expert Pilots, the charge thereof was given to Lieutenant Don Diego Sanchez; he to worke more like a louldier then an incendiarie. though hee might with eafe have fired them,

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 169

them, would by force bring them awayBeing come to the place, he landed fome Mufquetiers, who holding them in the great Trench in play, did fo farre divert them, that he having feized their Boats, embarqued his men, and returned vistorious to the camp.

The praife for th'execution of this notable ait muft be atrribured to the Lieurenant, the advice to the Count Dake; who many times voted in the Iusta; that fome Boates fhould be fitted and armed in the poole, and though they did it. nor (pretending it to be needleffe or impoffible, onely becaufethey made it 10.) hee ftill infilted uponit, till at lait Doss Franoefco d'Iuarra comming thither; finding the truth of it, did put it in execurion, and after the enemy had beene divers. times damnified thereby, at laft it hindered them from this notable reizefe.

Onely by overcomming grear difficulcies, are obtained great Conquelts. Hee whom they are againft ufeth all his endeavours to evercome them he that bath them on his fide, trufting in rhem growerh careleffe;- and whereas bee hould oppochis enemies wit, with his whole

## 170

underftanding ; hee oppofech it with rocks, woods, hills, and feas, as though mans underitanding had not known how to goe over rocks and hills, and paffe through Seas. Hee is deceived that trults the refiftance to a pregnant underftanding to any thing but to a more pregnant.

The Prince of Conde blamed the raine in the lart attempr, and thinking with valour co relieve the place, having ralied his Armie, he came again within light of it and fortified himfelfe upon the fame hill. And having chofen the beft ipirits amongft his whole body, hee fent them downe into the plaine, backed by all the Cavallerie, with the Duke of Luin, to fet upon the Fortifications in tivo places. The onfer was terrible and dreadfull, made by men who were of noble blood, undaunted hearts, valiant, worthy to live for the de ence of Religion, or die in de fending it. Five hundred Gentlemen died in the field, andmoft part in the Trenches, finding dearh and buriall in the fame place, an lleaving their memories written in the bloud of honourable wounds. May they reft in peace, and let a forraigne Penrapplaud them, to make
their actions ive, who deed gloricully valiant.

Amonglt our men were molt note 1 , the two Field-Marhals, Molinguena Knight, and Don Giufto di Terres, whole quarters were iet upon. The Field-Marhall Joks di Arze, who wenr with part of ti.e Count Dukes Regiment to relieve them. This man raifed his fortunes in Flasders by his valour, and paffing through all the degrees of honour, attained to thar of Field-Marhall. Hee is brother to Dons Peter de Arze, Secretary of State. The one employes his Pen, the other his Sword; the one fights, the other writes and gives advice. They ftrive who thall doe the beft fervice. Which of them deferves beft I know not Seeing there is no difference, in their abilitie, or will, but onely in cheir proteffion. It will then appeare when the comperition between the Pen and the Sivord is decided.

But above all thined the valour of the Marquis of Torrecufa, who fometimes Leading the head on, fomerimes heartening the men, omitted nor any thing pertaining to a Commander or Souldier; but hee did command. and performe

## 172 The chiefe Events

performed it. Hee encouraged with words, and when need reguired with deeds. The enemy being gotten upon a Trench, taking a pike in his hand, hee hindered, difordered, and overthre, him.

Let Poets have leave to defcribe their Orlaxdoes, and Rinaldoes, if under thofe fabulous narrations they intended to fet downe this rruth, That one mans valour is fufficient to gaine a vistorie.

An Army when ic hath no Commander, is a meere dead carkaffe, wher it hath one, it is fometimes valiant, fometimes coivardly, according to the foule which a!filts it. Even as the Merbers runne to the danger where the head is, fo the fouldier where it goeth. That hand, that arme, that fearfully avoides and Ghunnes the blow which intends to wound it rafhly runs on to meet it, in defence of the hea ?. When one brutif, and uradvifed man goct', all the relt will follow, (though covard) to precipitate themfelves. So doe not the wife. He fufiers himfelfe molt to be led who hath leaft wit, cthe danger diminitheth wit in many, and takes it cuite away from the

## is the Spanifb Monarchy. 173

molt part, making them like brutes follow him who goeth before them. Having loft their owne difcourfe, they now dif. courfe with anothers. They hold it more fecure to fight in his company, then to fly without him. They would all runne blindfold into a precipice, fome through valour, and the molt part through ignorance, were it not that many who fhould lead on, fometimes ftay behind to meet the danger, till it is too late, and the Army runnes away : and whereas before ignorance would have been favourable to caufe him to be followed, it now becomes dangerous to caufe him to be obeyed. All truft remaining now in good advifement which is hard for to find place in him that feareth, and molt neceffary to alter the courfe which he is in. I fay not that all the Commanders ought to be fuch, but fuch a one there mult be, and that Army which wanteth fuch a one ás the Marguis of Torreonsais, fhall notbee without a head but without a heart. The Prince of Conde recired into France with the body of his Army, or to fay better. Dee dragged it along, like a fad and lifeleffe corps.

## 174 . The chiefe Events

He is a man ordained to doe harme where he hath received benefits, that fortune which being adverfe, cauled him to receive them, feeing him in his profperity unthankfiull, returnes to be adverte to caufe him to repay them, thewing it felfe contrary to his defignes, yet favourable to his engagements, where without being either treacherous or unngratefull, he ferves his King faichfully, and becaufe of his ill fortune ferves his benefactor happily. And if he alone be happy, that (according to the opinion of the wife) cannot be unhappy, whe can be fo, more then this Prince, who is alwayes fure to obtaine noble renowne, whether he lofe or conguer, by either deferving much, or paying a great debt?

The enemy having already twice in vaine attempted the reliete of Salfas, driven back fometimes by valour, fometimes by fortune, being now palt hope, drew his Army into ceuarters.

The Truce being expired in Italy, the enemy entred into Chiers, a place which may be termed to have no walls, and had nomen init. The Marquis drew neere unto them, and hindered their deigne of

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 175

beffeging Turine; He cut them off a Convoy ot a thoutand Souldiers; tiee proffered battell divers times, and they refuling it, drove them to retire to the hills, hee followed and overtooke them, and forced them five times to change their Itations, Itill gaining them from them, ant had he not wanted time, hee had Itrength and courage enough to have deftroyed that Army in two houres.

The enemy left in the fie'd, many dead men, Itore of baggage and munition, and found himfelfe 10 rent, that hee durft nor hinder the Marquis from takng of Bubio, and Wefme, two great Caltles which they had lett in thofe paffes.

The proceedings of his Majefties Armies this yeare in ltaly were thofe wee have rehearled which are peradventure greater, then either ancient or moderne hiltories mention to have beene performed in the fhort fpace of fo few moneths, with fo many painfull circumitances.

The war was betweene Nations, warlike both renowned and experienced; In a fruitfill Land, full of ftrong holds, provided of victuall and Ammunition, affifted with old forces and Garrifonned

## 176 The chiefe Events

roned with valiant Souldiers.
The glories gained, were Armies roured, and overthrown, reliefes fometimes hindered,fometimes given; Forts affalted won \& defended; walls fcaled, great ftore of places taken, fometimes by fudden affaults, iometimes by fhort fieges, none through intelligence, one onely through cunning, \& that valoroully; Very few voluntarily, \& they firlt terrified, fome yeilding to ftregth, fom to fear, \&2 al to jultice.

The Conquelts have been th'enlarging of his Majelties Dominions, from Milan to the Alpes by Yurea and Turin,\& to the Sea by Monferrat and thofe places. Thus were the confultations and advices of the French Minifters of State deceived, who by not coming into It aly with grear forces, bcŭ led within a fmal có,a?fe the poffibility of co uelts to the Spanih armies.

Tue Spaniard who workes leait, and fights beft of other Nations, changing his fighting into labouring loft his advantage, and amidtt the bankes of earth rather hid his valour, then defended his perfon. But at laft (were it chance, neceffitie or choice) throwing away the fpade, and taking the fword in hand; he

- hhewed.


## in the Sparifb Moxarchy. 177

newed the fouldiers were not different from their anceltors, but rather the commanders ; not the valour, but the way of fiohting. This fodaine metamorphofis, which in the conquering of places, changed dayes intu houres, was mifinterpreted by them who thould have believed it, and becaufe they would not refpest true valour where it was, they accufed falshood where it was not, and endeavouring rather to fecure themfelves from that, then defend themfelves againlt the other, deceiving their owne underftand ing they found themfelves to be faithfully teryed and valiantiy overcome.

To hide the enemies valour from the vulgar fort, becaufe they may not be difheartned, is a conveniency of State. To punih innocent perfons, and conceale the guilty, to deceive the people, to gaine repute with the Prince favours of damnable policy. But for a man to deceive himfelfe, and not believe what he fees, as if the not believing of it, could unmake the truth, and th'imagination make the ca (e, is neither humane not diabolicall conveniency. It is true that the one defroyes the truth, and the other frames

## 178 <br> The chriefe Events

the cafe; but it being not in the thing its felfe, but oney in the underfanding by fuch an errour they lofe both th'underfanding and the thing.
It was dayly expeited at Court to heare of the yeelding of the place, and that fhortly, prifoners, and thofe which runne over to us, did affure us of it ; affirming they drunke cifterne water, eat rottenbisker, wanted wood and falt ; that fouldiers fell fick, and dyed, and thore who were living didmutiny. That the Governour talked, though he did not parley: and though his words were rather of fending to the Prince of Conde then of yeilding the place it was a ligne of faintneffe, and he would yeild it. Likelyhood perfwaded thefe things to be true, and efpecially the defire of thofe who were unwilling to premeditate, and knew not how to provide for the dammages which delay might breed, made it ferve for a cófort, \& a remedy to perfivade themfelves and others that it would quickly yield.

It is neceffary for an officer to provide for all as he canimagine, and not for that chiefly which is molt iikely, but for that which is moft dangerous. To ex-
pect a good event quickly, it is neceffary firlt to fecure ones felt from evil. One that is to be deceived is never guite and utcerly deceived; there alwaies remaines fomewhar, in which being not totally deceived, though it doth not undeceive, it ttoubleth.

Hope whic 1 s framed to fuftaine one, in great misfortunes being ill ufed, precipitates us into miferable calamities, Not cótent through it to keep our lelves from dipaire, we would thereby attaine to happineffe. The future becomes prefent, hope is turned into fecurity; And being deceived by our owne defires, and not hopes promifes, we call it deceitfull and talfe; which would not be deceitfull if we did nor make it fo, nor falfe if we did not falfifie it.It deceives none, but leaves them perplexed without any determination ; and he that determineth, changeth it by his opinion.

The Count Duke who made ufe of hope, with a provifo that it fhould not prejudice wifdome, comforted himfelfe through it, as if it were certaine, and did ufe prevention againft it, as if it were falfe. At this time the art and deceipt of the French was to be more looked too, then

## 180 The chiefe Events

them their valour, who have changed their cultome, though not their nature, their head, though not their heart.

That the Prince of Conde was'their generall, who had openly faid in Dola, that his underftarding was much to be feared, his force not fo much, and his fortune but little. That it was unlikely he havinghad fo mixch time and to convenient a feafon had not fufficiently viAualled the place.

That it was to be imagined the Go.vernour fearing force, more then want, to prevent that, feigned he feared that molt which he feared lealt. To eate rotten bisket was in wife men, not fo much a demonftration of want as an argument of providence, as they who referved what was good, againtt a greater faintneffe, and for a fmaller number; little regarding. the health and life of fouldiers, when they can doe no better fervice, then to dye.

When fhew is made in any befieged place either of abundance or want, the contrary is alwayes to be doubted.
His advice was that two thouland of the belt old fouldiers thould be left in the trenches; the reft fhould be lodged fome where

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. I81

where nere thereabouts to refrefh themfelves, and be ready upon any occafions. That the void place, which they left, Thould be filled up with men out of Catalonia, Arragon, and Valencia, with a promife of exchanging them if the fiege Thould lalt long, and if ended roone, to difcharge them. That the Gallies fhould returne to Naples and Sicilie, having firt landed reliefe into the State of Milan, and the relt remaine in Spaixe. And that the fhips fhould make ready for the Indian voyage. .
$=$ This opinion was applauded by all men, but not wholly effected, by reafon of a rumour which began to be raifed ot a great reliefe preparing in France. And likewife becaule that fome few weekes after, the Governour upon honourable conditions (which are let downe in the end of the booke ) covenanted to yeeld up the place, if he were not relieved by the day of th'Epiphanie.

In the meane time the Marguis of Balbafes ive to the Duke of Ferrandina, how he heard the enemy was advancing with a numerous and frong Army, having a double intent ; Namely, either to force
sheir out-workes, or to keep a vay our provifons. Hee fhewed that the former was not impolfiple to be done, and the atter vere eafie. He fake, concerning both, with much valour, and yet with fome diffidence an ordinary thing in wife men, and being done with moderation is profitable to lecure one againft future times. If it falls cut well it credits the valour which hath overcome the difficulcies: if ill, the advice which hath given notice of them.

The Marquis of Villa Framea fent the Letter to the Count Duke.

I have affirmed this to be a great Generall, whe from his Clofet can command Armies. I would befilent in many things concerning the Count Drke, if I framed a Poem, but I relate them, becaufe I write a Hiftoric. The former makes ufe of what is likely, though falfe, the later leaves not out that which is unlikely fo it be true.

- Beit thengranted mee to prove the truth of the molt unlikely thing. I can fpeake in the commendation of this great man to honour my Hiltorie by the Letter he writ to Marquis Spinola. I will fet


## in the Spanifl Monarchy. 183

fet down a crue copy of it word by word, without adding or diminifhing. I thail fecure my felfe from the blemilh o: infamy, if not amongft ignorant and malicious men (the praile and difpraife of whom I equally contemne) yer anongft underftanding and well minded tolk, who alone can commend and difcommend.

SIR, There arrived here this morning a letter from the Marquis of Villa Franca dated xhe 29 of the laft month, and one inclofed from your Excellency of the 27. I confeffe that if the advices your Excellency writes of, are thofe which you expeited for certaine, I find my felfe disburthened of three quarters of the cares I tooke. An Army which hath two defignes, doth much weaken the ation with the diverfity of two intentions, whereas having but one it may doe much, there remaining no appeale to the fecond. I will now difcourfe with your Excellency upon your letter to the Marçuis after I have curforily touched fomething concerning the time given for the yeilding of the place, it being judged 10 be fomewhat long; and though here others confider other points of the capi-
tulation, I only infift upon that of having water in the dike, which being to extravagant and new to me, makerh mee. fufpeit (finding no other reafon for ic) they defired it, to th'end they might have water to drinke ; and if they wanted water (feeing thirlt cannot be endured two dayes,) I would by no meanes have made any agreement with them, but for a very fhort time. And if this bee a cuftomary claufe, and there be other reafons to enforce it, I referre my felfe to experience, which though it cannot hinder the prefixed time from being chought long, may fatisfie the Ptristeft difficultie, and chiefelt ground. Now comming to your Excelencies Letter, wherein you relate the enemies twofold defignes, I will fpeake what I thinke of it.

As for the firlt, to force the out-works, I affuredly believe that after fo many moneths time they are fetled in very good forme, and that by that meanes, and with the helpe of the Cavallerie, it will be more then difficult for the enemy to force thofe workes. in fuch fort as to enter them with their Horfe and Ordnance which not comming to paffe, it wiil bee impoliinle
impolfible for him to obtaine his defire, which I fear the leffe, becaule I know thofe two shourand men are making ready for yourExcellencie, which I fuppofe you onely wanted to fecure the Workes; As for the hindering you from victuall, if I may fpeake the truth, I hold it impolfible, your Excellencie hath within your Trenches provifion fufficient for twelve dayes at the lealt, according to the reiterated orders, and peradventure for longer. They who muft hinder them, mult return back to take the way of Efagel, and confequently muft paffe under your Excellencies Canon, whereby befides the diicouragement an Army receives by going back, ycu may have them purfued in the reare; and if that flould not hinder their good order, yet might you keepe backe their reliefes and provifions, in thofe rough, an 1 narrow waies, and provide as is fitting fot Perpignane. Out of which in my opinion it would bee good to leave fome Commanders of Horfe and Foor, who uniting themfelves with the men of the Province might upon any occafion either oblfruct the enemies provifions, or bring him in betiveen thofe Troops and

## 186 The chiefe Events

your excellencie. For as it may be believed and as upon the lalt Orders advice is given, that the Catalanes were raifing forces, whereof the faintelt part, increafing the bulk, and the beft, ftrengthening Perpignane, would make, the enemies intentions exceeding difficult, if not impoffible. Befides, I hold it very painfull, there being no provifions ready upon the Frontiers the 2 -4th day, to bring, all neceffary provifions from Sicas, to Rivas altas for an Army (which ftands in want of it ) by reafon of the great compaffe which by reafon of the ill way they mult fetch, and the fhort time of ten dayes, which they have to worke in, your Excellencie being abundantly ftored with every thing for above twelve. If the enemy fhould make his attempt by the way of Rivas altas, your Excellencie would not have fo much time as I, think of between t're one, and the other action. But before any fuch paffage could bee made, you would have had it, by that which I have fpoken of Perpignase, and alwayes cut off the enemies Convoyes, they being at fuch a diftance, or burne their provilions in theiv Magazines. For it is impolfible, and
not to be imagined that he can keep fuch a guard upon his provifions and other places, and fecure himfelfe.

Wence fhall he provide fuch a ftrong Army both in qualiry and quantity as might ftand for feaven whole leagues in every place ftronger then the body of your Excellencies, to fecure him from receiving a blow, which may diforder them, and utterly overthrow his defigne?

I befeech your Excellencie to pardonme, as Don Pietrode Toledo was ivont to fay, if I fouldiour it ivith fo great a fonldiour, who am altogether inexpert in that arr. I conclude Sir, that we are and ought to be Gods; hoping he will not forfake his caufe. I fend your Excellency money.
I will alfo rehearfe the circumfances; they will feeme weake, but they are neceffary to lay open the great ones; they will abafemy ftile, tut what is that to the purpofe, fo they doe exalt anothers glories. He did not elaborate this letter with his pen, he did dictate it without any intermiffon, not when he was quiet and farre from any noile, fit-
iing at tis desk, but in his coach running, not imparting it to any, onely distating it to Don Antoxio Carnero one of his fecretaries, a man of great underitanding and knowledge, of moft unfpotted fidelity, and cleanehands, in fervice attencive and infatigable.

Ibeare with them who fet me out for a flatterer. They fee me rewarded, they examine my talent, and becaufe they find no great worth, they blemifh it with a great vice. They find me a writer of great a tions, they examine what they can doe, and becaufe they find it come fhort, they call my relations fables. The concioufneffe of what themfelves would doe, caufeth them to thinke ill of him that writes, \& that which they cannot do to mifunderftand him that doth it. An Hitorian of underitanding flatters himfelfif he imagines he canavoid flanders. He hath fomewhar within him which he concealeth,a great vertue and a great vice, which being hid from the eyes of the vulgar, when it comes to be manifefte $t$, it feeming he ad leth it of his own (becaule that though it were fo, it was rot knowne) they call him, if he writes

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 189

of excellent good ones, a flatterer, if of exceeding bad ones, a malicious perfon. I would be pleafing to heare vice reproved, but with modefty, and vertue extolled, but with moderation ; and its difpleafing to have the fecrers of veriues and vices difcovered: They would be willing to embrace the one, andnot have it knowne, and to not labour for the other, andyet have it imagiired that they have it. They heare the writers expreffions blame vice wholly, but in vertue praife onely the greatelt, and men having commonly of the one and the other, and few of the latter excelfively, participating of the reproof, which evtends it felfe even to mediocrity, and not of the praife, which goeth onely upon the extreames, on the one part they remaine ill fatisfied, on the other offended. Upon the report of the reliefe comming out of France, his Majelties Army was increafed by a confiderable number of Catallanes (who in this occafion carried themfelves cunningly) and by many (culdiours whe ha* ving recovered their healths went to em. ploy it in their malters fervice.

Above all ochers remarkeable was the

## 190 <br> The chiefe Events

arrivall of the Duke of Naccara and Maccheda not fo much becaufe he brought three handred of the choicelt mulquetriers of the Fleet with him, as for the perfon of fo compleate a Gentleman, who not through any other perfwafion but of his own well-guided coueage, voluntarily came to increare it in that Army, and whereas before he without feare ftood expeiting the enemy, now feareleffe came to challenge him, He put himfelfe in the regiment of the Count Duke, under the Command of the Field Marfhall Don Iobn de efrźe, to make himfelfe famous with his pike in his han?.

Let it be a fufficient atteftation for the nobility of his bloud, that I have named him; Of the great endowments of his perfon, the relation of this attion. In the former are rehearfed the memories o his many illultrious forefatioers, and a perfon is fet forth in whom is made the union of all thofe greatnefles; in the latter fhines, modelty, wildome, valout, and devotion to the King, andgallantneffe in ferving him.

Th'intelligences which many, wayes

## in the Spanifh Monariby. 191

came out of France were, That the molt Chriftian King was refo'ved to have the Fort relieved. That to that purpofe came out of Paris; Menfiear de Poxcourle Margui : of Coaftin Nephew to the Cardina'l of Richelien. That the old and new Forces of Languedock were appointed for that purpofe, foure companies of forraign Nations, the Regiment of Lionsois, the Regiment of guards, eight which came out of Liorraike downe the Rone, all the Caval!erie that ivas in pay, the bound Nobility which was bound to come, and that which came voluntary; and becaufe they fhould be enow for fuch a great enterprife, therebeing 2 fearficie of them in France, they refolved to remedy it by the fame way as it came, taking the $\mathrm{Ba}-$ ron of Bafsmenier out of prifon (for to they write him ) that hee might with the Duke of $L_{\text {nin }}$, and Marhall La Force, goe to the reliefe.

All this rumour ended with the approach of the Vanguard within foure miles of the place, the day before that which was agreed upon for the yielding of it; And to th'eud che default might be imputed to want of cime, or peradven-
192 The chiefe Events
ture to the Governour, becaufe it was not then relieved, and for the former time to the Generall, becaufe he could not relieve it. They did nothing at all, and left it to be doubted what they would have done ifthey had tought. But what they would have done, may be knowne by what they did, when they did fight before. The time was long enough being forre moneths; the Governour deferved commendations, having (before he yeilded) fuffered long famine, deadly difeafes, and great mutinies. The Generall was juftified by the two reliefes which he attempred, and by this third which was not attempted.

The Governour came out of the Hold according to the agreement the day of the Epiphanie.

The Lord would not have our King want this place to offer up that day wherin other Kings prefent their gifts unto him. And becaufe it floould bee manifelt what his Majefties directions dne operate in all enterprifes, what the Princes hopefulneffe bepins to operate, and what the Count Dakes advice had operated, this could not happen upon a fittinger day then this, which is his Majefties day

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 193

by his preheminencie amonglt Kings, The Princes by his name of Balthajar; and the Count Dukes by reaion it was his birth day: The Sane fines not upon the birth-day 0 . him who was borne for the greatnefle of $t h$ is Monarchic, nor returner not to the place where be was an that day, or celebrate of - , it, with a leffe favourable affect, then t conquelt of a place regained with fo much valour and glory.

There the world being fpeitator, be held as on a Theatre too great and terible Provinces, Spaine and France fighting a Duell, not for their fates, but for their reputations, expecting, as the reward of victory, the renown of being the mott valiant.
There with fore thousand foot, and two thoufand fivehundred horle, was the enemies whole forces fer upon in their own quarters, and routing them, they were fain to be batolding to the darkneffe of the night, to not have it known whether they retreated or fled.

There in little more then an hours were alfaulted gained and throne downe their Forts, halle Moons, Trenches, and
what ever elfe in fo many dayes was fer up about that place by French art, and. underltanding, to fafeguard him frcincthe the Spanilh valour.
There a few forces tir fickly by realon of:h rea with want, and the aire, defend une unfeafonableneffe of cuit of tr:- wed a large and weak cirAr. ."ench, againlt a molt powerfull any of the Kiug of France increafed in great number by the Sculdiers, \& Gentry of the adjoyning Provinces, and by old regiments from far parts much reinforced. There along the Poole with weake Barkes was overthrowna Convoy, and a great aide overcome, which the enemy had embargued to relieve the place with victuals and Ammunition.

There after they had gathered ingether all the power of France, they durlt not appea; e in the field, being difheartened by the horror of reeing their d.ad companiors, and dicouraged with the remenbrance of the oyerthrowes they hat there received.

Finally the Spanard; have there been alwayes conçuerors, a foct a horfe-back. by land, by water in open field or intrenched, in affalting, or in defending tren-
ches; Let it be knowne that nature on the one fide raines downe plemty, on the other it inftilleth valour, to fome it gives number, to others folidneffe, and hath imprinted the character of fuperiority in the brealt of them who exceed in valour ${ }_{2}$ not in number.

Articles of furfpenjoin of Armes between the two Crowns. The Lady Dwtcheffe, anai the Lords Princes of Savoy, froms the 14 th of Augult, to the 20 th of OStober, 1639.
$T$ being judged neceffary for furdhering the Propoftions made betweene the Dutchefle and the Princes of Savog and to prevent the ruine of Piensont, 'to have a Sufpenfion of Arms betivecne stie two Crownes, the Dutcieffe and the faid Princes, as well in Italy, as in all other her highneffe of Savoys Dominions; Thie faid Sulpenfion was agreed upon, for the publick good and quieneffe and in regar tof the good offices done bv th'Aschbifhop of St. Severima, Apoitolicall Nurtio uncill the 24 ch of OEtobsn=next of this prefent yeare 16390 to givecthejr

## 196 Thechiefe Events

Majelties notice thereof in the meane. rime, and to receive an anfiwer concerning their pleafures therein.During which time, all manner of hottilities thall ceafe on all fides, and that upon the conditions following.

That the Cittadell of Turis Thall remaine in the Dutcheffe and the Frenches pofieffion, and the City of Twrim in the Princes of Savoy and the Spaniards poffeffion, as they are at this prefent with fuch numbers of men as fhall bee judged fit for the guarding of the faid places.

That they both may work within the faid places during the time of the faid fufpenfion, or as it may be agreed between them, as fhall bee appointed for the faid purpofe, and as it thall bee fer downe in the Covenants made and confirmed this prefent day.

The two Armies thall retire each to the Provinces and Townes of their owne fide, and into their feverall Holds, (as more particularly it hath been covenan. ted and agreed in ancther ivriting beating date with thefe prefent) withous making any incurfions, or doing any other aits of hoftility. And it any thing

## in the Spanifb Monarchy. 197

Thould happen contrary to this Article, the dammage thall be made good againe, and fatisfaction given upon the complaint without any breach of this fufpenfion thereby.

That in fuch places as are poffeffed by the tivo Crownes, the Dutcheffe, and the faid Princes of Savay; none of their officers, nor any other perfon of their partie, fhall without a Paffport goe to places belonging to the other party, nor into their Armies; or much leffe into any fush places, as is covenanted they fhould retire into.

As concerning Cafal, things fhall remaine in the ftate they are at this prefenc, and no att of holtility to be done on cither fide.

It fhall be lawfull for the Field MarThalls and Officers of Jultice, and creafure, and other Officers of the moft Chrittian Kings Armies, to goe and returne to and from the faid Cafal, and other places of Monferrat, where the faid moft Chriftian King hath any Garrifon, as likewife thofe as thatl bee fent by his Majefties Generalls and Officers, or fuch as thall be within the faid places, with

## 198 The chiefe Events

Paffes from the molt Chriftian Kings Generalls, or the Governours, or any other perfon as fhali have the command of the place from whence they thall come, which Paffes being fhewne both at going and comming to the Governours of tuch places as Thall be held by his Catholick Majettie, and the faid Princes of Savoy, they thall bee tied to fuffer them to goe and come freely without any lett on either fide.

All Officers which dae not belong to the faid Garrifon of Cafal, and are not at this prefent in it, and fhall yoe into it during the time of the faid fufpenfion, thall be tied to come forth againe before it be ended, according to the order which Thall be given them io to doeby, the molt Chriltian Kings Generalls, upon paine that all Officers as fhall herein offend, Thall be dealt with as breakers of this fuipenfionand Treaty. That the ficke and wounded of the Spaniith Army may freely be carried and conveyed from Turix into the State of $\mathcal{M}$ ilas along the River $\mathcal{P O}_{0}$, with Paffes from the Governcur of the City of Tarim, together with fuch as thall conduif the faid fick and wounded men,
their goods and baggage, Thewing the faid Paffes to the Governours of Cafal and Civafco. And the Boat-men may likewife returne to Turin with their empty Boats, wherein they fhall have carried the faid infirme men, without needing any other Paffes then fuch as they fhewed at their going, which they fhall againe fhew to the faid Governours of Civafco and Cafal at their comming back, without any moleftation on either fide.

As for the Garrifon of the faid Cafalit may be renewed to the guantitie of fix hundred men, during the faid fufpenfion, taking out as many of them that are in it, in the prefence of a Commiffary of each part.
The moft Chriltian Kings Qfficers may caufe any goods as they defire to bee brought out of the faid place, and carried to what p.ace they pleafe.

The prifoners of bot't Crownes fhall for this time be exchanged; Captaine for Captane, and other Officers, for Officers of the like qualitie, and fouldier for fouldier. And in cale there bee a greater number of prifoners one the one fide
then on the other, they fhall be freed, pay: ing for their ranfomes one moneths pay, and their charoe, excepting Collonels, whofe ranfomes fhall be agreed upon by the Generalls; And as for the prifoners of war, who are in the Dutcheffes hands, and the Princes of Savoj's, of either Armres belonging to the two Crownes, they thall be included in the precedent Artic'e. And as for other prifoners which are in the Dutcheffes or Princes hands, they fhali be exchanged one for another, and being more of one fide then the other, they fhall be particularly treated of between che Dutcheffe and the Princes.

And upon the faid Articles the faid Sufpenfion hath been agreed upon, beginning from this prefent day the 24 . of Oftober this yeare 1639 . Which fhall beyin in $T$ s. rin the day of the date, and in Piemont and Monferrat, foure dayes after, and in Nizza and Savoy fix dayes.Meaning that it beginning from this day, the Armies which are in Trris hall not doe any a.ts of hoftilitie on neither fide to any place whatfoever, and if they doe, fatisfation fhall be given.

For the fulfilling and performing wher-

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 201

of the under written Lords, doe faithfulfully and fincerely bind themfelves, and it witneffe thereof have bin fublcribed two copies, the one in Spanifh by the moft Illultrious Prince Thomas and the molt Excellent Lord Marquis of Leganes; And the other in French, by the Cardinall of Valletta, and the Duke of L onguevitte the 14. of Auguf 1639 .

Articles agreed upon is the treaty of fufpenfion of armes between the troo Crowns, the Dutcheffe, and Princes of Savoy, concerning the places of Piemont which are to remaine at the difpofall of each party.
$T_{1} 1 \mathrm{rf}$ all the lands of the territorie of Afti, betweene Po, and Tanaro, to the lands of CMonferrat, fhall remaine at the difpofall of the fail Princes beginning from Santena, Cafanova. Ternavas, Pralormo, la Monta, St. Damsian and Gouon unto the Tanaro, together with St. Steven where neither thall lye ; and the Inne which is on this fide of the $\boldsymbol{P}_{\boldsymbol{\theta}}$ fhall remaine neutrall. And all the land from the fide of Cherafco and Carmagnuola thall

## 198.Thechiefe Events

remaine in the Dntcheffes difpofall. All the lands of the territory of Aft on the other fide the Tamaro ouvard Nizza della Paglia and of the marifh fide fhall likewife be at the Princes difpofal, beginning from the way to Afti to Ceva, Coftigliode, Collozo, St. Stiven of Belbe, Coffano, Cafto, Mombarche, Mullazano, Ceva; And Caftagwote thall remaine neatrall, and all the other townes on the fide of Alba. And from the aforefaid Townes to the Tamaro; they remaine under the Dutchefles command. And likewife it is agreed that the faid Coffano, and the fort of it hat remaine neuter, becau'e of the paffage from Albato Bobbio, \& Vefme. The towns going from Ceva to Conio on the mountain fide thall be likewire at the dipofing of the faid Princes; beginning from S̄t. Michaell. Villanova CMorrozo, Margarita, Montaner, Caftelletto and Comro. And to goefrom Conio to Revello, Bufca thall likewife belong to the Princes ; and Carde fhall remaine neuter for the paffage. And likewife to goe from Conio to Dromero, and Valle di Maira; Berney and Carallio fhall in the forefaid manner remaine at the Princes difpofall.

## in the Spanilh Monarchy. 192

And all the townes, except the aforefaid of St. Michael, Margarita and the other which are mentioned being on the fide of Bene, Foffanos Savigliano and Saluzzo, together with the Vallie of St . Paire, fhall be at the Dutcheffes difpofing, with the reft of the Townes of Piemont.

And all the townes to goe from 7 Fs rea to Masfe, and from Maffe to Flet by the way of the mountaine, which remaine betweene the Dora Baltea, and the river Orco hall be at the faid Princes difpofing. And to goe from the faid Maffe to Thrin ; Follizo and Lizi fhall remaine neuter; as alfo Borgaro and Settimo to goe from the Cirtadell of Turin to $\mathbf{C i}$ vafco. And all the ocher townes from Maffe to Civafor, and from thence to Flet, with thore of the river Orca to Sufa hall be at the Dutcheffes difpofing, as alio Cimena and its territorie, St. $\mathbb{R a}_{\mathrm{a}}$ phael, and Caftawetto.

And aiong by the vale of Lanzo beginning from the faid place the country thall be free without any quartering, onely it fhall contribute to the Dutcheffes horfe which thall lie in $V$ iw, becaufe the

## 204 . Thechiefe Events

faid Vale may provide and carry provifion to the City, and Cittadell of Turis, whither the Inhabitants of the faid Vally Thall be fuffered to goe and fell the faid provifions ar their pleafures. And it is further agreed; that in the places belonging to the Abby of St.Benigno; none fhall quarter unleffe they be paffengers.

And in the Lands of Beinajco, Grogliafco, Cogliegre, and Altefamo, none thall guarter, nor much leffe thall any quarter neer to any of the faid places where there is a Garrifon of the one or the other fide, by two miles.

Articles agreed upon between the mof $E_{i x}$ cellent Lords, the Marquis of Balbales, and the Count of Santa Colomba Geneneralls of the Armies of Cantabria, and Catalonia. And Monfieur d'Efpinan, Field-Marßall of the moft Chriftian Kings Armies, and Governour of the Caftle and Fort of Salfas, this Friday 23 th December 1639. iw the Leaguer under Salfas.

Irit, it is agreed that the faid CMonfieur d'Efpinan fhall come forth of the

## in the Spanifl Monarchy. 205

Caltle and fort of Salfas ivith all the Garrifon, Chieftaines, Officers, Souldiers, and Perfons of what condition foever, the fixt day of $\mathcal{F}$ anuary next at nine a clock in the morning, punctually, incafe the place be not relieved the fame day, at the fame houre. By relieving is meant, if the molt Chriftian Kings Army doth force the outward Trenches, and the Army which befiegeth the place to retreat ; or doth relieve the place with provifions as much as it wants: fo that there being any of thore things wanting, the Place fhall not be underitood to be relieved; and the befieged fhall be bound to yeeld it up at the appointed houre, though they might bee relieved within a moment after it.

The befieged fhall come out fecure in their lives and perfons, without any diAalte or grievance, with all their Armes and baggage, Drums beating, Colours lying. Afatches lighted at both ends, and Bullets in their mouthes.

They Thall likewite have one of the French peeces of Ordnance which are in he Caftle with its Carriages and other infruments, and Ammunition fufficient - o make tiventy fliot.

## 206 The chiefe Events

The befieged fhall be condueted to Nar bona, the fhortelt and direftelt way, and Thall goe away the fame day, and houre as is agreed upon, and thall march that night to Sixas, to which place they are to be convoyed, that they may arriue thither iafely. And the next day bcing the feventh of Jansary, though the Convoy returne, they thall depart to Narbona, unto which place they thall carry the Holtages. And word is given, that they fhall paffe to the faid City with the fame fecurity.

The befiegers fhall furnith them with Waggons as many as thall be needfull to carry away their unable men, their baggage and Armes if they bee laid on, and Monfieur d'Espisan, and the Captaines Thall have horles.
The befieging Army doth covenant, that the water hall rume into the Mote on borh fides, the fame day as Hoftages fhall be given. It lying at their difcretion to turne it away again, foure dayes before norice of the reliefe bee given : the befieged being not to hinder them from doing it, by no way nor meanes.

In caffe the reliefe fhould appeare in fight on the eve of the day, the Truce

## in the Spanifh Monarchy. 207

Thall bee broken on either fide, and all manner of holtilitie fhall bee allowed, which till then fhall have ceafed, as likewife all manner of offenfive workes thall ceare till that time on both fides, and the befiegers fhall not worke but onely with in their Trenches; nor the befieged fhall, much leffe, make any Workes, either within or whlthout, whereby the befiegers may be endaramaged. And in cafe the reliefe be beaten back, though it ftand in fight without doing any thing at the appointed houre, the capitulation fhall bee kept, and the place yielded up, all the Articles here rehearfed, being obferved.
It Thall be lawfull for Monjicur d'E/pinan to fend one of his men to hisGererall, to give him an accompt of this prefent Treaty, Conditionally that the perfon who goeth from the faid $A 10 n f i e u r d^{\prime} E \int_{p i}$ san fhall not return again into the place, but may return as far as the Lea guer, and fpake with cMonfiewr d'Efpinan in the prefence of fuch perfons as ffall bee appointed for that purpofe by the Generalls Excellencies, or fhall write his mind to him, the Letter comming open into their Excellencies hands. Giving the perfon

## 208

which Thall come torch a paffe, \& a trumpetter, as farre as the Cavagne of Palma. And for the more affurance of this treaty ; Holtages fhall be given on both fides. Namely a Captaine of the army of that guard which is commanded by the Marquis of Mortara, and another of a Tercia of Spaniards, another of th'Italians, and another of Walloons. And on Monfiekr d'Efpinan his fide fhall be delivered, two Captaines of the regiment of the Duke of Enguiess, and two more of the other two regiments that are in the hold. Which holtages thall be kept on both fides untill this treaty be accomplifhed, and the horfes and carts which thal have conducted the befieged being come to Narbora, fhall be fent back againe, and the holłages likewife, all which things being arrived to the army, their hoftages fhall be feut away fafe, with a trumpetter.
For the performance of which treaty it Thall be fubfribed by the molt Excellent Lords Generall of the befiedging army, and by Monfieur d'ESpinan, and the heads of the regiments which are within Salfas. Given at the leaguer beforel SalSas the 23. December 1629.

$$
F \subset N 1 S .
$$




(2xan

 2
$\square$
$\qquad$ $-4$
$\square$ =
$\qquad$
$\qquad$
$\qquad$
$\qquad$

$\qquad$
 $\square$


#  <br> $\square$ 






$\qquad$ $1-1+0$


$\square$ $+$

$\cos _{8}^{2}$

$$
i 8
$$

$$
0
$$



2



